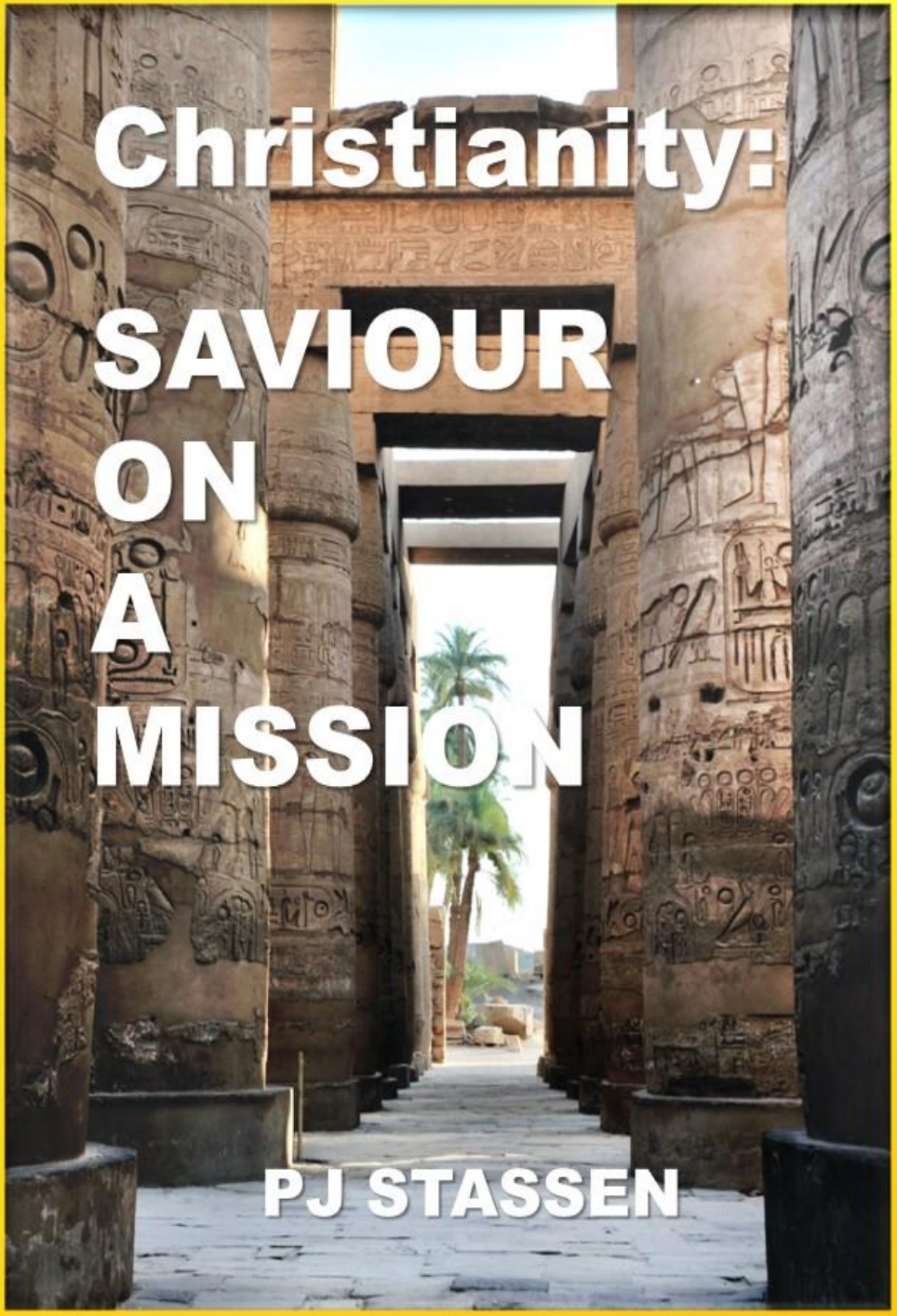
Christianity:

SAVIOUR ON A MISSION



PJ STASSEN

Christianity

SAVIOUR ON A MISSION

An Easy Reader for Busy People on the Run

© Copyright 2021 P.J. Stassen
All Rights Reserved

ISBN 978-0-6397-5896-1

PJ Stassen
Centurion
SOUTH AFRICA

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

CONTENTS

PART ONE: THE DESIGNING SAVIOUR 11

1. The Mysterious Universe 12
2. Fascinating Facts About the Universe 17
3. Heaven Must Be Beautiful 24
4. Photographic Evidence That the Bible Is True 27
5. No Law Without a Lawgiver 30
6. The Awesome and Fearful Mystery of God 33
7. Surprised by Majesty! 36
8. No Loadshedding Blackouts in Heaven 41
9. How Cosmologists Are Affirming the Hand of the Intelligent Designer in the Cosmos 44
10. Theoretical Physics and the Multidimensional Universe 47
11. In the Beginning 53

PART TWO: THE CREATOR SAVIOUR *56*

12. How Christians Know That Adam and Eve Were the First Two Humans Ever 57
13. How Christians Know That Noah's Flood Really Happened 63
14. Flood Legends of the World 67
15. Giants in the Bible 70
16. How Biblical Archaeology Attests to the Historicity of the Bible 73
17. How Many Adams in History? 75
18. Ten Empirical Proofs That God Is Real 78
19. How Old Is the Cosmos? 89
20. New Testament Affirmation of the Genesis Creation Account 96
21. The Wonder of ZOE vs. BIOS Life 99
22. Mankind's Romance with the Triangle 103

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

23. Quantum Leap Creationism 107
24. The Law of Creatorship 110
25. Facts About Scientists You Ought to Know 112
26. Creative Evolution: You Must Be Joking! 115

PART THREE: CHRISTOLOGY: THE SAVIOUR'S SCEPTRE OF AUTHORITY 117

27. The Law of the Conservation of Mass 118
28. How Omnipotent Is God the Almighty Really? 121
29. The Glory of God 127
30. The Golden Voice and Sceptre of Authority 129
31. Infinity 133
32. The Case for the Trinity 137
33. The Divinity of Jesus Christ 143
34. The Genealogy of Jesus Christ Traced Back to Adam 148
35. Alpha & Omega 150
36. Beauty for Ashes 153
37. Because Jesus Christ Said So 156
38. The 'I AMs' of Jesus Christ 159
39. Build Your House on the Rock of Ages 162
40. The Life and Mission of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ 165
41. Climbing Mount Golgotha 179
42. Did Jesus Christ Know Science? 182
43. Face to Face with the Author of Life 184
44. How His Contemporaries Attested to the Incorruptible Character of Jesus Christ 187
45. How Jesus Christ Is Being Vindicated in the News 191
46. Jesus Christ: His Prophecies as They Played Out Then and Now 194
47. Jesus Christ: Messiah or Just a Great Teacher? 198
48. Jesus Christ: Rock of Ages 201
49. Jesus Christ: Son of Man 208

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

50. Jesus Christ: The Light of the World 212
51. Jesus Christ: The Stone That the Builders Rejected 218
52. Names & Titles of Jesus Christ 222
53. Nine Things That Saddened Jesus Christ's Heart 233
54. Why Diamonds Are So Valuable 236
55. The Lion Shall Roar Out of Zion! 239
56. The LORD Is My Shepherd 241
57. The Miracle of the Righteousness of Jesus Christ: The Paschal Lamb of God 245
58. The Most Illustrious Robe in the Cosmos 248
59. The Name of Jesus Christ Is a Strong Tower 251
60. The Pearl of Great Price 255
61. The Great White Throne Judgment: Who Presides? 257

Acknowledgements 6

Foreword 7

Introduction 9

Invitation 260

Recommended Sources 261

Author Profile 268

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Acknowledgements

Grateful for/to:

1. Bible translations interchangeably consulted:

King James Version (KJV/KJV+) & *Modern King James Version* (MKJV) unless otherwise indicated e.g., *Young's Literal Translation* (YLT) & *Hebraic Roots Bible* (HRB). The reader may find that, occasionally, I have inserted capitals (in brackets) into Scripture references for the purpose of clarity.

2. E-Sword.net: *The Sword of the Lord with an Electronic Edge (Free Bible Study for the PC).* Online 2021.

3. All the sources, scholars, historical figures and authors I have been allowed to mention, quote or use as examples in the course of writing.

4. Roxanne (Pexels/Pixabay: For Cover Image/Modified by PJ Stassen.

5. Cecilia Stassen, for her ongoing assistance, encouragement and invaluable help.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Foreword

An informative book, I believe, should be like a sumptuous dinner ... lavish, interesting, easily digestible and to be remembered for years afterwards, and with this book I have aimed to accomplish exactly that, for what could be more interesting and memorable than the persona, life and ministry of a man who has changed the history of the world to the matchless extent that Jesus of Nazareth (the Christ) had done?

Unlike many postmodernists, who have so superficially dismissed the historical Jesus (for all intents and purposes) as nothing more than a deluded first-century religious fanatic and rabble rouser of a charlatan who was arrested by the authorities, not as political zealot or aspiring messiah, but as a common, albeit charismatic public nuisance who disingenuously passed off cheap street magicians' illusions as Biblical quality miracles, i.e., postmodernists who today, like pagan sorcerers and derelict, toothless oriental mystics, dare to determine the measure of a man and his words by (of all things!) the application of coloured beads.

I, instead, insist that only a carpenter-rabbi of His divine origin, moral stature and matchless wisdom could have transformed this 1970s runaway freight-train and weirds-mobile of a cynical, suburban hedonist and amoral agnostic into a person so enamoured with this Messiah that I, in the sunset season of my life, have aspired to write not only one book about His sacred cause and merciful gospel, but at least three!

Today, when I read the popular atheists of our times, or debate a seasoned agnostic about the existence of God, I can only heartily agree with the wise theologians who, upon hearing people say that the character of the first-century Jesus of history was so remarkable that He must have been 'forged' (and

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

should be considered a 'fake') instead have so aptly retorted (among others) as follows (my paraphrasing):

"*The man Jesus of Nazareth was so unique, gifted, remarkable and special that only a real Jesus Christ could have forged a Jesus Christ; furthermore, if the Bible really were only a collection of fairy tales, then why is it either banned or severely persecuted in at least 52 countries?*"

PJ Stassen
Centurion, South Africa.
December 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Introduction

I wrote this book, not as a theologian (which I am not), but as a sinner saved by grace and a social commentator concerned with the cause and future of Christianity in the world.

To create some semblance of formal structure, I have sorted the 61 articles ('chapters') into two parts which I hope will facilitate comfortable and inspirational reading:

Part 1. Intelligent Design: Supporting the worldview of the *Intelligent Design* of the 'Cosmos' (not the 'Chaos') by an *Intelligent Designer.*

Part 2. Creationism: Supporting the worldview of *Biblical Creationism* exactly as the Bible teaches.

Part 3. Christology: Discussing the persona, ministry, teachings, moral gravitas, character and divine stature of *Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.*

The story of the Bible and God's designs for man; the Commandments of Moses and the Gospel of Jesus Christ, can, for all intents and purposes, miraculously integrated to be summarised by a single Scripture reference:

> *"For as by one man's disobedience [THE FIRST ADAM] many were made sinners, so by the obedience of One [THE LAST ADAM, JESUS CHRIST] shall many be made righteous."*
>
> [Romans5:19MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

I am reminded of what C.S. Lewis has said (my paraphrasing):

> *"There are only two kinds of people, i.e., those who say to God, 'Thy will be done!' and those to whom God must say, "Okay then ... have it your way!"*

The lot and final destiny of every (fully informed & evangelised) person that ever lived will, in other words, be decided on this, i.e., a choice between Good and Evil, Light and Darkness, Jesus and Barabbas, Christ and Satan.

With those who object that anyone could exercise such a critical choice still wrongly from pure ignorance, or from cultural and/or religious biases, I can only in sympathy say that I fully concur, and although I insist that there is no other name but the Name of Jesus Christ by which we are saved, we probably should leave such metaphysical judgments (i.e., in respect of the 'inadequately informed and poorly evangelised') for God to decide and deal with.

There is a huge difference between being a 'sinner' and being 'ungodly'/'wicked'. All the 'ungodly' and 'wicked' are sinners, but not all 'sinners' are necessarily 'ungodly or 'wicked' ... they are simply lost and must be found. God has said:

> *"And He [GOD] said, I will make all My goodness pass before you [MOSES], and I will proclaim the name of Jehovah before you. And I will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will have mercy on whom I will have mercy."*
>
> [Exodus33:10MKJV].

Bon voyage!

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

PART ONE:
THE DESIGNING SAVIOUR

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 1

THE MYSTERIOUS UNIVERSE

Majestic, Awe-inspiring & Frightening

1. **Proposition #1. The Cosmos is vast.** At an estimated 93 billion light-years across (i.e., the 'observable' Cosmos) the Cosmos is the largest and most imposing piece of 'real estate' ever.

2. **Proposition #2. The Cosmos is dark and foreboding.** Scientists reportedly know only about 5% of what is going on in the Cosmos; the rest (95%) comprises *'undetectable by astronomical instruments dark matter + dark energy.'* The Creator may obviously thus be obscured from the view and scientific observations of atheists in the 95% they still cannot explain.

3. **Proposition #3. The Cosmos is dangerous & scary.** Fearsome and overwhelming natural forces make the Cosmos a dangerous place for mortal man to be in, i.e., fascinatingly majestic and beautiful on the one hand yet terrifying on the other.

4. **Proposition #4. The Cosmos is mysterious & complex.** At the time of his demise, Stephen Hawking's goal of a *'Theory of Everything'* has remained a pipe-dream unfulfilled. Outside of *Biblical revelation (Old & New Testaments)* no man can

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

really know why there is a Cosmos (and how exactly it must be explained) at all.

Phenomena like e.g., *acoustics (the 'audible range'), universal gravitation, the strong & weak nuclear forces, electromagnetic forces, electricity, quantum physics, astrophysics, cosmology, hydrological forces, meteorology & natural disasters* etc. are a source of constant research.

5. **Proposition #5. The Cosmos is orderly.** The word 'cosmos' denotes the exact opposite of the word 'chaos'.

> 5.1 COSMOS: *'an orderly harmonious systematic universe' 'order', 'harmony'*
>
> 5.2 CHAOS: *'a state of utter confusion' / 'the blackout caused chaos throughout the city' / 'a confused mass or mixture'*

P.S. Why do atheists and atheist-evolutionists who do not believe in God (Intelligent Designer) nevertheless insist on using the term, *'the Cosmos',* instead of *'the Chaos'?*

6. **Proposition #6. God (i.e., the "I AM!" of Moses and Mt. Sinai) ordained and conceived the idea of the Cosmos.** Jesus of Nazareth (the Christ) was the *Projects Engineer* and *Master Builder* through whom God (the Father) has created the Cosmos, who is sitting at the *Right Hand of the Majesty* on high and upholding all things (in the Cosmos) by the Word of His power. The Bible says:

> *"In the beginning [TIME] God created the heavens [SPACE] and the earth [MATTER]."*
>
> [Genesis1:1MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

(i) TIME *first* otherwise *when* would He put the heavens [SPACE] and the earth [MATTER]?

(ii) The heavens [SPACE] *secondly* otherwise *where* would He put the earth [MATTER]?

"I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded."

[Isaiah45:12MKJV].

"God, who at many times and in many ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, has in these last days spoken to us by His Son [JESUS CHRIST] whom He [GOD THE FATHER] has appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the worlds, who being the shining splendours of His glory, and the express image of His essence, and upholding all things by the word of His power, through Himself cleansing of our sins, He [JESUS CHRIST] sat down on the right of the Majesty on high."

[Hebrews1:1-3MKJV].

P.S. Capitals inserted for clarity.

7. **Proposition #7. Only the Bible has the answers.** Outside of the Bible and Biblical revelation no atheist / atheist-evolutionist has ever succeeded in coherently, satisfactorily and convincingly answering the critical questions below:

7.1 Where does the Cosmos come from? (*"From a singularity that exploded!"* would not be an intelligent answer).

7.2 Where do we come from? ("*From a unicellular organism that emerged from a primordial soup of chemicals millions of years ago"* would not be intelligent answer).

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

7.3 Why is the Cosmos here? (*"Because of the Big Bang!"* would not be an intelligent answer).

7.4 Why are here? (*"Because of natural selection, beneficial mutations, adaptation, speciation, Lamarckism, punctuated equilibrium and the random accident of dumb & brainless Evolution!"* would not be an intelligent answer).

7.5 What is our purpose? (*"Species survival!"* would not be an intelligent answer).

7.6 Where are we going? (*"With a 100% mortality rate for every generation for every nation we are going to die and be recycled into the ecology as fresh new compost for future generations to use and enjoy!"* would not be an intelligent answer).

7.7. Is there life after death? (*"We believe in death-after-death, not life-after-death; there is no God, no Hereafter, no Heaven, no Hell and the Bible lied!"* would not be an intelligent answer).

7.8 Is there hope for Planet Earth? (*"Earth will eventually be engulfed and burnt to a cinder when the Sun changes into a 'red giant' thousands of years into the future! ... there is no hope for Planet Earth!"* would not be an intelligent answer).

P.S. So not even going to Mars will be safe in the end.

7.9 How can we atone for our sin or find peace of mind in our hearts this age? (*"There is no such thing as good or evil (or sin); only thinking makes it so ... I do not suffer from a guilt complex and owe nobody no excuse or apology for my life and conduct!"* would not be an intelligent answer).

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

7.10 How can mankind know the difference between right and wrong? (*"Deciding between 'right and wrong' is decided in terms of 'situational ethics' founded on 'moral relativism' and the 'reason of man'; atheists can be good and happy without God, the Bible lied and for professional guidance on the matter apply today for a membership card at your nearest 'atheists association' or 'secular humanist society'!"* would not be an intelligent answer).

8. **Enters C.S. Lewis.** C.S. Lewis, prolific author of *'Mere Christianity', 'The Problem of Pain'* etc. and children's books like *'The Chronicles of Narnia'* etc., erstwhile Oxford don and Cambridge professor once wrote:

> *There are only two kinds of people, i.e., those who say to God, "Thy will be done!" and those to whom God must say, "Okay then ... have it your way!"*

Which one are you?

References

1. Lewis, C.S. (1952) *Mere Christianity.* Geoffrey Bles; Macmillan (U.K.).
2. Wikipedia. *Dark Energy.* Online 2021.
3. Wikipedia. *Dark Matter.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 2

FASCINATING FACTS ABOUT THE UNIVERSE

Facing the Limitations of Science

1. **The Universe was created 'Ex Nihilo' by GOD.** 'Ex Nihilo' is defined as, *'Out of nothing'* (Merriam-Webster). The Universe we know and live in was conceived, intelligently designed and created out of nothing by the God ('Elohim', the 'I Am' or 'YHWH' etc.) of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob & Moses etc.). Jesus Christ was/is the *Projects Engineer* in charge of the *Creation, Maintenance & Management of the Cosmos.*

> *"God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they."*
>
> [Hebrews1:1-4KJV].
>
> *"Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad. Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am."*
>
> [John8:56-58KJV].
>
> *"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Almighty ... Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and, What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea ... And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely ... I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last."

[Revelation1:8,11; 21:6; 22:13KJV].

"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth."

[Genesis1:1KJV].

P.S. 'Beginning' (creation of TIME); 'Heaven' (creation of SPACE); 'Earth' (creation of MATTER).

"As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were."

[Romans4:17KJV].

2. **Time, Space & Matter.** It would appear as if GOD has made Time, Space & Matter in the correct sequence e.g.

"In the beginning [TIME] God created the heavens [SPACE] and the earth [MATTER.]."

[Genesis1:1KJV].

3. **Project Engineering & Cost.** The 'astronomical' (pardon the pun) cost attached to the design & creation of the Universe must have been thoroughly considered by the Creator before its creation. Jesus Christ Himself has taught:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it?"

[Luke14:28KJV].

P.S. It thus stands to reason that God must have had the intellectual stature and capacity ('money'/'entrepreneurial capital') for the project (imagine the 'cost').

4. **Our Universe is not Infinite.** The Universe has been measured by God with its limits known to its Creator, and thus cannot be infinite. The 'heavens' (Space) are bounded, and the earth has been measured.

"Thick clouds are a covering to him, that he seeth not; and he walketh in the circuit of heaven."

[Job22:14KJV].

"He stood, and measured the earth: he beheld, and drove asunder the nations; and the everlasting mountains were scattered, the perpetual hills did bow: his ways are everlasting."

[Habakkuk3:6KJV].

"Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and meted out heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance?"

[Isaiah40:12KJV].

"Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world."

[Acts15:18KJV].

5. **The Beginning & End of all things.** Only God knows the *beginning* and *end* of all things and thus cannot be known by any man, no matter how learned, educated, gifted, talented, bright or intelligent.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end."

[Ecclesiastes3:11KJV].

6. **The Galaxies & Stars.** God knows how many stars there are, and He calls them by their names.

"He telleth the number of the stars; he calleth them all by their names."

[Psalm147:4KJV].

"Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath created these things, that bringeth out their host by number: he calleth them all by names by the greatness of his might, for that he is strong in power; not one faileth."

[Isaiah40:26KJV].

7. **GOD is Infinite.** GOD inhabits Eternity and His understanding is Infinite. He is the Alpha & Omega and has no beginning and no end [Psalm145:5; Isaiah-57:15; Jeremiah23:24; Revelation1:8,11; 21:6; 22:13].

8. **Eternal things.** The Bible teaches that Eternal things usually are invisible to the naked eye.

"For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse."

[Romans1:20KJV].

"While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are not seen are eternal ... For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens."

[2Corinthians4:18; 5:1KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen."
[1Timothy1:17KJV].

"By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible."
[Hebrews11:27KJV].

9. **The Limitations of Science.** In mentioning just a few:

9.1 **The Oceans.** Scientists know *less than 20%* of what is going on in our oceans with *more than 80%* of our oceans remaining unmapped, unobserved & unexplored (U.S. National Ocean Service).

9.2 **The Cosmos.** Mankind (the scientist) *knows only about 5%* of what is going on in the observable Cosmos; the rest *(95%)* is undetectable by scientific instruments *'dark matter (27%) + dark energy (68%)'* (Nasa Science).

9.3 **Sound Spectrum (Acoustics).** Humans have a range of hearing between *20Hz and 20 kHz (20 000Hz)* and *cannot hear Ultrasound (above 20kHz)* or *Infra-sound (below20Hz).* (Wikipedia).

9.4 **Electromagnetic Spectrum.** Humans can only *see 0.0035%* of the *light (between Infrared & Ultraviolet)* in the *Electromagnetic Spectrum.* (Live Science).

9.5 **Questions Science cannot answer outside of the Revelation of Scripture.**

9.5.1 Why is there something instead of nothing? (e.g., Why are there galaxies, stars, solar systems, planets, moons, the animal kingdom, the plant kingdom,

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

humankind etc. instead of nothing ... i.e., whose idea was it?).

9.5.2 Where does the Universe come from? (Saying that the 'Big Bang' caused the Universe is not an answer ... they must be able to say where the Universe including the Big Bang came from).

9.5.3 Where do we come from? (No Scientology & Dianetics science-fiction please).

9.5.4 Why are we here? (Explain our presence on planet earth but no Erich von Daniken 'UFO' cult type fiction please).

9.5.5 Where are we going? (Not "We're emigrating to Mars!" pipedreams please).

9.5.6 Is there hope for planet Earth? (Not '80 000 years' from now please. People want to know about next week, next month, next year or even 100-500 years from now ... not 'millions of years' from now).

"Now gird up your loins like a man; for I will ask of you, and you teach Me. Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? Tell if you have understanding! Who has set its measurements, for you know? Or who has stretched the line on it? On what are its bases sunk, or who cast its cornerstone, when the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy?"

[Job38:3-7MKJV].

References

1. Live Science. *Electromagnetic Spectrum.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2. Merriam-Webster Dictionary & Thesaurus. *Ex Nihilo.* Online 2021.
3. U.S. National Ocean Service. *The Oceans.* Online 2021.
4. Wikipedia. *Sound Spectrum: Acoustics.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 3

HEAVEN MUST BE BEAUTIFUL

No Wonder It is Called 'Paradise'

1. **Heaven must be beautiful.** We know that because the Bible says so. The Apostle Paul writes:

> *"But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him."*
>
> [1Corinthians2:9KJV].

2. **God loves colour!** We know that because the Bible says so. It would also appear as if God's favourite colour could be 'emerald' (green). The Bible describes God's Throne as follows:

> *"And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald."*
>
> [Revelation4:3KJV].

3. **The New Jerusalem.** The beauty of the New Jerusalem, the believers' future megacity-of-choice, are described by the Apostle John ('the beloved disciple') as follows:

> *"Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal.*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates.

And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

And the city lieth four-square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal.

And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man that is, of the angel.

And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass.

And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald.

The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst.

And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it.

And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof."

[Revelation21:11-23 KJV].

4. **Theophanies.** A 'theophany' is an 'appearance of God in sensible form' (Gk. 'Theophaneia') [Britannica.com]. For instance:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And they saw the God of Israel: and there was under his feet as it were a paved work of a sapphire stone, and as it were the body of heaven in his clearness."

[Exodus24:10KJV].

References

1. Britannica.com. *Theophany.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 4

PHOTOGRAPHIC EVIDENCE THAT THE BIBLE IS TRUE

The Bible Teaches That the Earth is a Sphere Suspended in Space

1. **Apollo-11.** That iconic image of planet Earth taken by Apollo 11 in 1969 provided science with the evidence in blazing colour that planet Earth is a sphere and, just like the Moon and the rest of the planets in the Solar System, is suspended in space; so, how anyone can look at the Moon or at a picture of the Earth and call it 'flat' boggles the mind.

Even 'flatter' than that those atheists who still will ridicule Christians with the bogus charge that they believe in a 'flat Earth', bearing in mind that the 'Flat Earth Society' is not representative of Christianity, and especially not of Evangelical Christianity. NASA's photo of Earth floating in space is one of Christendom's best proofs ('prima facie evidence') that the Bible is authentic, true and valid beyond all reasonable doubt.

2. **The Virgin Birth of the Cosmos.** Strange as it may seem most atheists will tell you that, although they do not believe in *the virgin birth of Jesus Christ* yet will nevertheless insist on *the 'virgin birth' of the Cosmos,* born spontaneously by accident through the biological-cosmic processes of random & brainless 'Evolution' out of nothing with nothing and without the help, inputs, expertise and permission of the Almighty Creator.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

3. **What the Bible teaches.** The Bible teaches that the *God of Abraham and Moses of Mt. Sinai* and the *Ten Commandments,* also referred to as *Jehovah ('YHWH'),* created the Universe, e.g., *time, space and matter:*

> *"In the beginning [TIME] God created the heaven [SPACE] and the earth [MATTER]."*
>
> [Genesis1:1KJV].
>
> *"Thus saith God the LORD, he that created the heavens, and stretched them out; he that spread forth the earth, and that which cometh out of it; he that giveth breath unto the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk therein."*
>
> [Isaiah42:5KJV].
>
> *"I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded."*
>
> [Isaiah45:12KJV].

4. **The Book of Job.** According to most scholars the *Book of Job,* one of the oldest in the Bible, was probably written anything between the 4th and 7th centuries B.C. (Before Christ). The charge thus that the man Job was a mythical figure from Jewish folklore is disingenuous and not worth taking seriously. The Bible in no uncertain terms affirms the fact that Job was a real person from history:

> 4.1 **The Apostle James.** *"Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy."*
>
> [James5:11KJV].
>
> 4.2 **The Prophet Ezekiel.** What's more is that even God Himself has, in the *Book of Ezekiel,* affirmed the existence of such a man as Job:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And though these three men, Noah, Daniel, and Job, were in it, they should deliver only their own souls by their righteousness, says the Lord Jehovah. If I cause destroying beasts to come through the land, and they spoil it so that it is deserted, so that no one may pass through because of the beasts, though these three men were in its midst, as I live, says the Lord Jehovah, they shall deliver neither sons nor daughters. They only shall be delivered, but the land shall be deserted.

"Or if I bring a sword on that land, and say, Sword, go through the land; so that I cut off man and beast from it; though these three men were in it, as I live, says the Lord Jehovah, they shall deliver neither sons nor daughters, but they only shall be delivered themselves. Or if I send a plague into that land, and pour out My fury on it in blood, to cut off man and beast from it; though Noah, Daniel, and Job were in it, as I live, says the Lord Jehovah, they shall deliver neither son nor daughter. They shall only deliver their own souls by their righteousness."

[Ezekiel14:14-20KJV].

It is thus clear that *Job* the man really existed and that he was not just a mythical figure from Jewish legend; remove *Job* from history and you remove *Noah* and *Daniel* from history too.

5. **The photographic evidence of the Bible's historicity & authenticity.** Although the Cosmos is replete with 'photographic evidence' that the Bible is true and God is real, how could the so-called 'mythical figure' (i.e., the man Job) centuries before the birth of Christ and modern science anyway have known to write (probably anything between the 4th and 7th centuries B.C.) the following so 100% in line with 21st century astronomy?

"He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing."

[Job26:7KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 5

NO LAWS WITHOUT A LAWGIVER

Where there are Laws, there are Lawgivers

1. **The amazing 'Stephen Hawking concession'.** It came as no surprise when one of the world's greatest physicists, Stephen Hawking (in an interesting video-clip just before his death), finally has had to concede the fact that this Universe is governed by intriguing Laws still not wholly understood and explained by science.

According to the scientists' own confession they still only know *(i) about 5% of what is going on in the Cosmos with the rest (95%) 'undetectable by scientific instruments dark matter & dark energy'* (and *(ii) about 10%-20% of what is going on in our oceans."*

2. **No Laws without a Lawgiver.** Even a child from grade-school would probably be able to tell us that there are no laws without lawgivers and that the Universe is governed by *Universal Laws* thanks to the creativity, innovation and initiative of a powerful Lawgiver ... the *YHWH (Jehovah) of Moses & Mt. Sinai* as exemplified in the life & ministry of *Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ('the Anointed One')* and as affirmed by the ultimate source of moral authority in the world today, i.e. the *Bible (Old & New Testaments).* Some notes:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2.1 Jesus Christ was/is the *Projects Engineer* tasked with the creation, maintenance and management of the Cosmos. [Hebrews1:1-14]. He is the ultimate *artist and impressionist* ... everything He does impresses us!

2.2 God the Father has conferred *all power in heaven and earth* on His Son Jesus Christ. [Matthew28:18-20].

2.3 Jesus Christ must have been fully conversant with scientific phenomena such as (among others) *universal gravitation, the strong & weak nuclear forces,* the *Electromagnetic Spectrum, the Periodic Table of the Elements, Acoustics, Quantum Physics, Biochemistry* and the mysteries of His *Heavenly Home,* yet has He lamented the fact that He could not tell His ignorant and unsophisticated first-century audiences about the 'Heavenly Things'.

"If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things?"

[John3:12KJV].

2.4 During His ministry on earth Jesus Christ demonstrated His power over the elements and forces of nature. [Mark4:41].

2.5 The Bible is replete with examples attesting to the fact that God has created the Universe, that He has created the Cosmos through Jesus Christ His Son and that the Universe and its basic laws are maintained and managed by Jesus Christ [Genesis1:1; 2:4; Isaiah40:25-26; 42:5; 45:8; Revelation10:6 etc.].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

3. **Comes the End.** The day will come when Jesus Christ, the temporary custodian of the *Kingdom of God,* will deliver the Kingdom back into the custody of His Heavenly Father:

> *"For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death."*
>
> [1Corinthians15:22, 24-26KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 6

THE AWESOME AND FEARFUL MYSTERY OF GOD

'Mysterium Tremendum et Fascinans'

1. **The Awesome & Fearful Mystery of God.** The mystery of God is described by some theologians as *'fearful and overwhelming' ('Mysterium Tremendum'), 'fearfully beautiful and fascinating' ('Mysterium Fascinosum')* perhaps summarised as 'the fearful and awesome mystery of God' *('Mysterium Tremendum et Fascinans').* [Encyclopaedia Britannica]. Some notes:

1.1 Proposition **#1.** God can do far above that which we can ever ask or think.

"Now to Him who is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us."
[Ephesians3:20KJV].

In other words, should I for instance ask, think or imagine a beautiful island with rolling green hills, magnificent gardens and elegant palms swaying in the wind surrounded by crystal lakes and topped by a gorgeous mansion of white marble, God would, subject to His discretion, be able (but not necessarily willing) to do that and even more (although wholly commensurate with His holy Wisdom and Character) than I may ever dare to ask or imagine. For God not even the 'sky' of our 'imagination' is the limit.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

1.2 **Proposition #2.** A person more intelligent, more creative, more innovative and talented (or simply better informed) than I admittedly probably would be able to imagine grander, more impressive and even more useful things than I for God, commensurate with His holy Wisdom and Character, to do. A gifted scientist may e.g., imagine solutions to scientific mysteries or problems etc. For all of us our limit would be only the capacity of our respective imaginations.

1.4 **Proposition #3.** What makes God so fearfully and awesomely mysterious is that, because of His *Absolute and Infinite intellect and imagination;* He can both imagine and do absolutely and infinitely above anything even the most gifted of scientists together hope can ever remotely hope to imagine even on their best and most brilliant of days. Imagine when God Himself were to start imagining wonderful things to do! After all, even the great Charles Spurgeon has admitted that this world as we know it probably was not the only show in town, but only some little side-show in God's grander cosmic scheme of things.

2. **The 'Alpha & Omega'; the 'Beginning & End' of all things.** The point where the 'ABSOLUTE & INFINITE' aspects of God's attributes merge is where even the *Spirit of God* engages in the probing and searching of the deep things of God for whatever reason deemed by God as expedient. Let's admit: We bow simultaneously before the awesome beauty and fearful mystery of an Absolute, Infinite Creator, indescribable with the primitive tools of the English language which to Gods ears must sound like the clumsy infant babbling of baby talk. The Apostle Paul writes:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"I have known a man in Christ, fourteen years ago—whether in the body I have not known, whether out of the body I have not known, God hath known—such an one being caught away unto the third heaven; and I have known such a man—whether in the body, whether out of the body, I have not known, God hath known — that he was caught away to the paradise, and heard unutterable sayings, that it is not possible for man to speak."

[2Corinthians12:2-4YLT].

"... but, according as it hath been written, 'What eye did not see, and ear did not hear, and upon the heart of man came not up, what God did prepare for those loving Him—' But God has revealed them to us by His Spirit; for the Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God ... So also no one knows the things of God except the Spirit of God."

[1Corinthians2:9,10,11bYLT].

"O depth of riches, and wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable His judgments, and untraceable His ways! For who did know the mind of the Lord? Or who did become His counsellor? Or who did first give to Him, and it shall be given back to him again? Because of Him, and through Him, and to Him are all things; to Him is the glory—to the ages. Amen."

[Romans11:33-36YLT].

References

1. Encyclopaedia Britannica. *The Awesome and Fearful Mystery of God.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 7

SURPRISED BY MAJESTY!

Living Among the Stars

1. **Man's 'Cognitive Dissonance' in the presence of Greatness.** When reflecting on the majesty of this immense ('visible') Cosmos (about 93 billion light-years in diameter) one stands aghast at the flood of (disturbing) mixed feelings assailing one from just about all sides. For instance:

1.1 **On the 'positive' side.** If God really were as awesome, big and majestic as the Bible teaches and Jesus Christ has affirmed, as Christians believe and as many sincere scientists concede, then one wonders why such an immense and unfathomable Deity would bother with us at all and why we should be allowed by such an awesome, august Persona the enjoyment of such majesty, if any at all ... quite a frightening thought. From death-row in a Pretoria prison, *Herman Charles Bosman* (later released on amnesty) once wrote:

Tho' my heart is bruised and riven;
Tho' my soul is scathed with scars.
Yet, I've touched the fringe of heaven ...
I've lived among the stars!

[Herman Charles Bosman, 1905-1951]

1.2 **On the 'negative' side.** If there really were no God (i.e., Almighty, Creator, Intelligent Designer, Supreme Being) as the atheist-evolutionists and society's neo-pagans would want

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

us to believe, that *cognitive dissonance* suddenly increases exponentially, and we feel ourselves in an even bigger quandary than the one alluded to in the previous scenario.

It would mean that *Spaceship Earth* is flying through space in its orbit around the Sun at the breakneck speed of *107 000 kph (67 000 mph)* with nobody in charge! Add to that a fathomless Universe, dark & foreboding and totally 'indifferent & unsympathetic' and of which 95% of it, i.e., *dark matter + dark energy* ('undetectable by scientific instruments') still cannot be explained by scientists, to whom then must we as humanity turn for advice, appeasement, rapprochement and salvation?

Is the *atheist-evolutionist* or *secular humanist* right when he says that there is *no God, no Heaven, no Hereafter* and that all they can offer us is *(i) a 100% mortality rate for every generation and every nation, (ii) death-after-dying* and *(iii) a free membership card from our nearest 'secular humanist society'?* If this is all they have on offer, why would anyone waste his time to apply for a membership card from such a *'Dead Poets Society'* (a toxic death cult) club at all? The only sane reason I can think of is ... misery loves company.

2. **The Ultimate Insult.** As Christians we have, however, made up our minds and made our choice: We, by the grace of God and not by any personal merit of our own, have decided to accept the *bona fides* of Jesus Christ as the Son of God and God's *de facto* projects engineer who created this Universe and upholds all things by the words of His power which encompasses such phenomena as the *Periodic Table of Elements,* the *Electromagnetic Spectrum*, the *Strong & Weak Nuclear Forces, Acoustics & Universal Gravitation, Quantum Physics, Celestial Mechanics* and the *Laws of Nature* as we know it. The Bible says:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they."

[Hebrews1:1-4KJV].

Against that majestic background and the promise that the Bible and the Gospel hold for believers everywhere, one wonders why anyone would exchange the promises of Jesus Christ, the *Master of the Universe* for a future and life in a plastic, climate-controlled bubble on planet Mars with a wilderness infinitely more inhospitable to man (and farther away) than the *Sahara, Death Valley,* the *Kalahari* and the *Namib* could ever pose. What is it with modern humans to always want to gravitate back to the savagery of his 'species' (so-called) 'pagan, caveman days' to want to go (at all costs) and rough it up on an inhospitable planet of no consequence or promise ... when God offers the New Jerusalem? The Bible says:

"Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also."

[John14:1-3KJV].

"And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen."

[Matthew28:18-20KJV].

"Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown. Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

"And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel:

"On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates. And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

"And the city lieth foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal. And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel. And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass.

"And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald; The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst. And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

"And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it. And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

"And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there. And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life."

[Revelation 3:11, 12; 21:1,2,10-27KJV].

References

1. Wikipedia. *Herman Charles Bosman.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 8

NO LOADSHEDDING BLACKOUTS IN HEAVEN

The Speed of Light? (107 000 k.p.s.); the Speed of Darkness? (Zero)

1. **The Father of Lights.** One of the many illustrious names (appellations) of *God the Father* is, *'The Father of Lights'.* The Bible says:

> *"Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above and comes down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness nor shadow of turning."*
>
> [James1:17MKJV].

2. **God covers Himself with Light as a Robe.**

> *"Bless Jehovah, O my soul. O Jehovah my God, You are very great; You have put on honor and majesty, covering Yourself with light as with a robe; and stretching out the heavens like a curtain."*
>
> [Psalm104:1-2MKJV].

3. **God uses the Lightning as a Weapon.**

> *"He covers His hands with the lightning, and commands it to strike the mark; Cast forth lightning and scatter them; shoot out Your arrows and destroy them."*
>
> [Job36:32; Pslam144:6MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

4. **Jesus Christ transfigured in a display of Light.** On the Mount of Transfiguration, Jesus was supernaturally transfigured with three eyewitnesses, i.e., Peter, James & John, in attendance:

> *"And He was transfigured before them. And His face shone as the sun, and His clothing was white as the light."*
> [Matthew17:2MKJV].

5. **Jesus Christ the Light of the World.**

> *"Then Jesus spoke again to them, saying, I am the Light of the world. He who follows Me shall not walk in darkness but shall have the light of life."*
> [John8:12MKJV].

6. **Life is about the Choice between Light & Darkness.**

> *"The light of the body is the eye. Therefore if your eye is sound, your whole body shall be full of light. But if your eye is evil, your whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is that darkness!"*
> [Matthew6:22-23MKJV].

P.S. No wonder one of the atheists' favourite mantras is: *"The way I see it ..."*

7. **The wicked have apparently chosen the Darkness.**

> *"And this is the condemnation, that the Light [JESUS] has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than the Light, because their deeds were evil. For everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come to the Light, lest his deeds should be exposed. But he who practices truth comes to the Light so that his works may be revealed, that they exist, having been worked in God."*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[John3:19-21MKJV].

Atheists have commented that, *"Christians are those people who are afraid of the dark ...!"* to which the professor* replied: *"Atheists are those people who are afraid of the Light!"*

*Professor John Lennox.

8. **In Heaven God Himself will provide the Light.** The Bible says about Heaven:

> *"And there will be no night there. And they need no lamp, or light of the sun; for the Lord God gives them light."*
> [Revelation22:5MKJV].

References

1. Lennox, John. *On Christians vs. Atheists.* YouTube, Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 9

HOW COSMOLOGISTS ARE AFFIRMING THE HAND OF THE INTELLIGENT DESIGNER IN THE COSMOS

'Intelligent Design' Written in the Stars

1. **The Cosmos.** According to many cosmologists the Universe is '13.77 billion years' *(sic)* (plus or minus '40 million years') old. Although not all Christians necessarily accept timelines such as these, let's humour the cosmologists and play along as if these figures are correct; isn't it then wonderful how they, be that as it may, are then still affirming the *Hand of the Intelligent Designer* just about everywhere we look?

Do the math (provided their figures can be trusted): Just imagine '13.77 billion years' of cosmic storms, the birth of stars, the fall and rise of galaxies, all kinds of cosmic collisions ... and yet this majestic and magnificent end-product that, by the cosmologists' themselves, is referred to as 'the Cosmos', as opposed to the opposite, 'the Chaos'! ['Cosmos' = "An orderly harmonious systematic universe"
[Merriam-Webster].

For the Universe (and our galaxy and solar system) to have survived such upheaval over so many millennia and epochs surely attests to the miracle-working power of the Creator!

2. **The Solar System.** Imagine what would happen were the Moon to suddenly disappear. According to scientists:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2.1 The tides caused by the Moon would become smaller thus affecting coastal eco-systems adversely.

2.2 Ocean currents caused by the Moon-driven tides would affect the global climate and the four seasons (which would change dramatically) adversely.

2.3 The Earth may shift from 'no tilt' to 'large tilt' with extreme weather, even ice ages, since the Moon's gravity holds the Earth stable at a tilt of 23.5°.

2.4 Without moonlight the animals in the eco-system would become totally confused and battle to hunt successfully, with prey proliferating prodigiously and predators going extinct. [Royal Museums Greenwich. Online].

2.5 The very fact that we have this industrious and useful moon to 'chaperone' us in our journey around the sun and onward toward the 'Great Attractor' is a miracle of enormous proportions.

3. **Seasons for now Safe!** After the havoc that the Biblical Flood had wreaked, God has promised Noah:

> *"... during all days of the earth, seed-time and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night, do not cease."*
>
> [Genesis8:22MKJV].

Some scholars actually believe that it could have been the violence of the *Flood of Noah* that has tilted the earth toward its 23.5 degrees 'obliquity' in its axis hence the announcement of 'stable seasons' after the Flood had subsided.

Be that as it may, earth has seasons because our planet's axis of rotation is tilted at an angle of 23.5 degrees relative to our

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

orbital plane, that is, the plane of Earth's orbit around the sun, and when the earth's obliquity really changed to make seasons as we know it possible is a complex study best left for the experts.

4. **Planet Earth.** According to cosmologists the Earth is '4.54 billion years' *(sic)* old, an unverifiable time-line not necessarily accepted as 'gospel truth' by *Young Earth Creationists.* Be that as it may, isn't it then anyway remarkable how the Sun has then been rising faithfully every morning for '4.54 billion years' (should their estimates be correct) and how the earth has been jet-setting through space rubble and all kinds of heavenly bodies for so long so safely without a scratch?

So, whether the reader is a *Young Earth* or *Old Earth creationist* is immaterial ... the fact that earth then must have survived intact such a turbulent, paroxysmal history remains a miracle of stupendous proportions either way.

5. **It Won't Last.** There are ominous days coming; the Bible says:

> *"The earth shall reel to and fro like a drunkard, and shall be removed like a cottage; and the transgression thereof shall be heavy upon it; and it shall fall, and not rise again. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the LORD shall punish the host of the high ones that are on high, and the kings of the earth upon the earth."*
>
> [Isaiah24:20-21KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 10

THEORETICAL PHYSICS AND THE MULTIDIMENSIONAL UNIVERSE

Heaven is God's Throne; the Earth is His Footstool [Acts7:49]

1. **Defining the 'Multidimensional' Universe.** The theoretical construct of the so-called (imaginary) *'Multidimensional Universe' ('Multiverse')* is described by cosmologists as follows:

> *"The multiverse is a hypothetical group of multiple universes. Together, these universes comprise everything that exists: the entirety of space, time, matter, energy, information, and the physical laws and constants that describe them. The different universes within the multiverse are called "parallel universes", "other universes", "alternate universes", or "many worlds".*
>
> [Wikipedia].

2. **What the Bible teaches.** Whether true, correct or valid is yet to be seen, but the idea of a *'multidimensional Cosmos'* is nevertheless nothing new. Some notes:

2.1 **God (the YHWH, or 'I AM!' of Moses & Mt. Sinai) created the heavens and the earth.**

"In the beginning [TIME] God created the heavens [SPACE] and the earth [MATTER]."

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[Genesis1:1KJV].

"When I look at Your heavens, the work of Your fingers, the moon and the stars which You have established; what is man that You are mindful of him, and the son of man, that You visit him? ... The heavens declare the glory of God; and the expanse proclaims His handiwork."

[Psalm8:3-4; 19:1MKJV].

"So says Jehovah God, He who created the heavens and stretched them out, spreading out the earth and its offspring; He who gives breath to the people on it and spirit to those who walk in it. ... "

[Isaiah42:5MKJV].

2.2 Jesus Christ was God the Father's de facto *Projects Engineer* who created (and still maintains) the entire Cosmos.

"God, who at many times and in many ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, has in these last days spoken to us by His Son [JESUS CHRIST] whom He has appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the worlds, who being the shining splendor of His glory, and the express image of His essence, and upholding all things by the word of His power, through Himself cleansing of our sins, He [JESUS CHRIST] sat down on the right of the Majesty on high, being made so much better than the angels, as He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they."

[Hebrews1:1-4MKJV].

2.3 Jesus Christ apparently often stood aghast at the ignorance and unbelief about 'heavenly things' ('cosmology') among His first century 'audiences'. He once told Nicodemus, a Pharisee and ruler of the Jews:

"If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things?"

[John3:12KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2.4 There are many 'heavens' in God's Creation.

"But will God indeed dwell on the earth? Behold, the heavens and the heaven of heavens cannot contain You. How much less this house which I have built?"

[1Kings8:27MKJV].

2.5 The 'highest of heavens' cannot contain God and God's existence is not contingent on the existence of 'space' as we know it.

"But will God indeed dwell on the earth? Behold, the heavens and the heaven of heavens cannot contain You. How much less this house which I have built?"

[1Kings8:27MKJV].

2.6 The heaven is God's Throne and the earth His footstool.

"So says Jehovah, Heaven is My throne, and earth My footstool. Where, then, is the house that you build for Me? And where is the place of My rest?"

[Isaiah66:1MKJV].

2.7 Jews & Christians worshipping God on earth are (for now) only worshipping from the geographical vantage point of God's 'footstool'.

"Praise Jehovah our God, and worship at His footstool; He is holy."

[Psalm99:5MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2.8 **In Eternity the redeemed saints from all nations and from all generations will, together with angels, cherubs and seraphs, worship God around His Throne.**

"After these things I looked, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, out of all nations and kindreds and people and tongues, stood before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, with palms in their hands. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God sitting on the throne, and to the Lamb.

"And all the angels stood around the throne, and the elders, and the four living creatures, and they fell before the throne on their faces and worshiped God, saying, Amen! Blessing and glory and wisdom and thanksgiving and honor and power and might be to our God forever and ever. Amen.

"And one of the elders answered, saying to me, Who are these who are arrayed in white robes, and from where do they come? And I said to him, Sir, you know. And he said to me, These are the ones who came out of the great tribulation and have washed their robes, and have whitened them in the blood of the Lamb.

"Therefore they are before the throne of God, and they serve Him day and night in His temple. And He sitting on the throne will dwell among them. They will not hunger any more, nor thirst any more, nor will the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb who is in the midst of the throne will feed them and will lead them to the fountains of living waters. And God will wipe away all tears from their eyes."

[Revelation7:9-17MKJV].

2.9. **It would appear as if the Seat of God's Administration ('Paradise') is in the *Third Heaven,* a civilisation so 'technologically' advanced that the Apostle Paul was incapable of articulating the exquisite nature of it to earthly people.**

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"But as it is written, 'Eye has not seen, nor ear heard,' nor has it entered into the heart of man, 'the things which God has prepared for those who love Him.' "

[1Corinthians2:9MKJV].

"Indeed, it is not profitable for me to boast. For I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord. I know a man in Christ fourteen years before (whether in the body, I do not know; or outside of the body, I do not know; God knows) such a one was caught up to the third Heaven. And I know such a man (whether in the body, or outside of the body, I do not know; God knows), that he was caught up into Paradise and heard unspeakable words, which it is not allowed for a man to utter."

[2Corinthians12:1-4MKJV].

2.10 **In Heaven, when the redeemed saints will gather to worship God and celebrate Jesus Christ their Redeemer, the saints' worship will rise like 'thunderclaps' up to God's Throne.**

"And I heard as the sound of a great multitude, and as the sound of many waters, and as the sound of strong thunders, saying, Hallelujah! For the Lord God omnipotent reigns!"

[Revelation19:6MKJV].

2.11 **There is a new Heaven and New Earth coming.**

"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth. For the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. And the sea no longer is."

[Revelation21:1MKJV].

"But according to His promise, we look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells."

[2Peter3:13MKJV].

2.12 **The New Jerusalem will descend from Heaven down to the New Earth.**

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of Heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her Husband ... And He sitting on the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And He said to me, Write, for these words are true and faithful ... And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of Heaven from God ... "

[Revelation21:2,5,10MKJV].

3. **Critical thinking.** Will the New Heaven and New Earth also take 'billions of years' to 'evolve' as the first ones allegedly did and as the evolutionists would want us to believe? So, either the Christians are in for a long wait, or the atheist-evolutionists are lying through their teeth.

References

1. Wikipedia. *The Multidimensional Universe.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 11

IN THE BEGINNING

A Single Spoken Sentence

1. **In the Beginning.** As alluded to before:

"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth."
[Genesis 1:1KJV].

P.S. The single spoken sentence that brought the Cosmos into existence; no wonder it is called the 'Universe' ('a single spoken sentence' = Uni + Verse):

- 'BEGINNING' > Time
- 'HEAVEN' > Space
- 'EARTH' > Matter.

2. **General Science.** As mentioned before, in daily conversations about the world people in general will refer to the Cosmos as the system made up of the three natural phenomena e.g., studied in classrooms as SPACE, TIME & MATTER.

2.1 **Space.** Remarkably SPACE as we know it (i.e., for now not considering such concepts as 'cyberspace' or 'metaphysical space') comprises the *three* dimensions of *Length, Breadth & Height.*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2.2 **Time.** Remarkably TIME as we know it likewise comprises the *three* dimensions of *Past, Present & Future.*

2.3 **Matter.** Remarkably MATTER as we know it also *comprises* the three dimensions of *Solids, Liquids & Gases.*

3. **Summary.** It would thus appear as if the Cosmos were, simplistically speaking, a function of SPACE (Length + Breadth + Height) x TIME (Past + Present + Future) x MATTER (Solids + Liquids + Gases). This does not, however, take into consideration such vague areas of study and investigation as higher and 'highest heavens' (as taught by the Bible) or the theoretical 'multiverses' /'multiple universes' (as theorised by some quantum physicists).

4. **What scientists thus far know about the Cosmos.** Bear in mind that scientists, by their own admission, still only know about 5% of what is going on in the Cosmos; the rest (95%) is considered *'undetectable by scientific instruments dark matter + dark energy'.*

By their own admission scientists also concede that they only know about 10%-20% of what is going on in our oceans. Do the math:

- Considering that most atheists & evolutionists who have bought into Darwinism as their religion-of-choice believe that the Universe is about *13.8 billion years (sic)* old (with the decimal point inserted probably for the illusion of engineering precision & mathematical accuracy); and that the earth is about *4.54 billion years (sic)* old. Isn't it then shocking that, after 'billions of years' of the Cosmos and the earth's existence and 'millions of years' of the 'evolution of man' *(sic)* they still only know 5% of what is going on in the

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Cosmos and about 10%-20% of what is going on in our oceans?

- Isn't it entirely and logically possible that the God that they refuse to believe in, i.e., the God who they say is 'evil' (and 'indifferent' or 'dead' anyway) may be obscured from their view and scientific observations in the 95% of the Cosmos or in the 80%-90% of the oceans they still know nothing about?

5. **The bitter irony.** One of the atheist's favourite mantras goes, *"I do not believe in a 'God' I cannot see!"* Yet, the same atheist may at this moment probably be hiding in his basement from a *Coronavirus* he cannot see.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

PART TWO:
THE CREATOR SAVIOUR

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 12

HOW CHRISTIANS KNOW THAT ADAM AND EVE WERE THE FIRST TWO HUMANS EVER

No 'Humans' Before Adam and Eve

1. **History.** Christians march to a different drum than the rest of the world, and particularly to the atheists and postmodernists with their pathological devotion to the way-out ideas of *consequentialism, freethought and secular humanism.* Generally speaking, historically only the following 'eras' really matter for the purpose of this article:

1.1 **Natural-Historically (Geologically):** The era before the *(Biblical) Flood of Noah* and the era *after the Flood of Noah.*

1.2 **Cultural-Historically.** The era *before the birth of Jesus Christ* and the era *after the ascension of Christ* depicted as B.C. (Before Christ) and A.D. (Anno Domini i.e. 'In the Year of the Lord) and not 'BCE' or 'CE' for non-Christians and those ashamed of Jesus Christ.

2. **Historical Implications.** Should the narrative about Adam and Eve as the first two humans ever and as depicted in the *Genesis Creation Account* ever prove to be authentic, valid & true, then:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2.1 The *Genesis Creation Account* could be believed and trusted.

2.2 The *Old Testament/Hebrew Bible* (depicting the Creator's dealings with His creation and with the men & women of the Bible) could be accepted as authentic, valid and true.

2.3 The history of Israel through the Old Testament books of *Genesis to Malachi* (as depicted in the Biblical narrative) could be accepted as authentic, valid & true.

3. How Christians know that Adam & Eve were the First Humans ever.

3.1 **The testimony of Jesus Christ.** Jesus Christ clearly did not believe in or preach/teach 'Evolution', and Christians know that the Biblical narrative about *Adam and Eve* as depicted in the *Genesis Creation Account* can be trusted as authentic, valid & true is because Jesus Christ said so and has affirmed it personally in public (and that settles it):

"And the Pharisees came to Him, tempting Him and saying to Him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? And He [JESUS] answered and said to them, Have you not read that He who made them at the beginning made them male and female ...?"

[Matthew19:3-4MKJV].

3.2 More references to Adam or Adam & Eve.

3.2.1 Before Adam no man to till the ground.

"And every shrub of the field was not yet on the earth, and every plant of the field had not yet sprung up, for Jehovah God had not caused it to rain upon the earth, and there was no man to

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

till the ground. But there went up from the earth a mist and watered all the face of the ground. And Jehovah God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul."

[Genesis2:5-7MKJV].

3.2.2 A City called 'Adam'.

" ... that the waters which came down from above stopped and rose up all in a heap, very far from the city Adam that is beside Zaretan. And those that came down toward the sea of the plain, the Salt Sea, were completely cut off. And the people passed over across from Jericho."

[Joshua3:16MKJV].

3.2.3 Adam as the Federal Head of the Human Race.

" ... then hear in Heaven Your dwelling-place, and forgive, and do, and give to every man according to all his ways, whose heart You know. For You, You only, know the hearts of all the sons of Adam."
[1Kings8:39MKJV].

3.2.4 The man Job on the legacy of Adam's sin.

"If I covered my transgressions like Adam, by hiding my iniquity in my bosom then let me tremble before a great multitude, and be terrified by the scorn of families; and I will be silent and not go out the door ...".

[Job31:33-34MKJV].

3.2.5 Adam breaking covenant with God.

"But, like Adam, they have broken the covenant. They have acted like traitors against Me there."

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[Hosea6:7MKJV].

3.2.6 The Apostle Paul on Adam.

[a] Epistle to the Romans.

"But death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those who had not sinned in the likeness of the transgression of Adam, who is the type of Him who was to come."

[Romans5:14MKJV].

[b] Epistle to the Corinthians.

"For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ all will be made alive. And so it is written, 'The first man, Adam, became a living soul,' the last Adam [JESUS CHRIST] was a life-giving Spirit."

[1Corinthians15:22, 45MKJV].

[c] Epistle to Timothy.

"For Adam was first formed, then Eve. And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression."

[1Timothy2:13-14MKJV].

3.2.7 The Epistle of Jude.

"And Enoch, the seventh from Adam, also prophesied to these, saying, Behold, the Lord came with myriads of His saints."

[Jude1:14MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

4. **Summary.** Agnostics, skeptics and 'Christian Atheists' ('postmodernist Christians') must bear in mind:

4.1 **Noah's Flood.** Christians also know that the *Genesis Creation Account's* reference to the Flood is authentic because Jesus Christ affirmed that in public in His teachings too.

4.2 **Evangelical Christianity.** Evangelical Christianity and the Gospel of Salvation introduced by Jesus Christ hinge on the First Man/Last Man principle:

"For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ all will be made alive. And so it is written, 'The first man, Adam, became a living soul,' the last Adam [JESUS CHRIST] was a life-giving Spirit."
[1Corinthians15:22, 45].

Take this away and the entire Gospel will collapse like a 'house-of-cards'. For the Apostle Paul's 'theology' to survive as viable and vindicated by history (i) Adam must have been the first man ever to have failed his 'species' and (ii) Jesus Christ the 'Last Man' Saviour of a 'new species' in Christ.

4.3 **The skeptics' 'Catch-22': What If?** Have you ever thought: What if the skeptics, agnostics etc. were right ... what if there really was a race before Adam and Adam was not the first man ever? (a heresy of course clearly refuted by the Bible)?

Would that have solved their problem of 'origins'? Where could such a race have come from? Who were the first prototype or prototypes? Wouldn't they simply again be back to 'Square 1"? (i.e., how to explain creation, the first two people etc.). This 'pre-Adamite race theory', in other words, would only serve to complicate things, not simplify things,

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

hence the preposterous 'Evolution' idea, and I reject such an idea with the contempt it deserves. i.e., scientifically, theologically and philosophically.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 13

HOW CHRISTIANS KNOW THAT NOAH'S FLOOD REALLY HAPPENED

How Jesus Christ Affirmed the Existence of Noah, the Ark and the Great Flood

1. **History.** As mentioned before, Christians march to a different drum than the rest of the world, particularly i.r.o. the evolutionists and also the atheists with their pathological devotion to the way-out ideas of *consequentialism, freethought and secular humanism.* Generally speaking, for Christians only the following 'eras' (as already mentioned) really matter:

1.1 **Geologically:** The era *before the (Biblical) Flood of Noah* and the era *after the Flood of Noah.*

1.2 **Cultural-Historically.** The era *before the birth of Jesus Christ* and the era after the ascension of Christ depicted as B.C. (Before Christ) and A.D. (Anno Domini: 'In the Year of the Lord') and not 'BCE'* or 'CE'** as non-Christians and those ashamed of Christ would have it.

*Before Common Era

**Common Era

1.3 **Historical implications.** Should the Biblical Flood associated with Noah and the story of the Ark as found in

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

the *Genesis Creation Account* ever prove to be authentic, valid and true, then:

1.3.1 The *Genesis Creation Account* could be believed and trusted.

1.3.2 The *Old Testament* (depicting the Creator's dealings with His creation and with the men & women of the Bible) could be accepted as authentic, valid and true.

1.3.3 The history of Israel throughout the *Old Testament* books of *Genesis to Malachi* (as depicted in the Biblical narrative) could be accepted as authentic, valid and true.

2. **How Christians know that Noah's Flood really happened.** Most evolutionists (and even some Christians and 'Christian Atheists') will refute the story of Noah's Flood with flimsy excuses arguing *(i) that the Flood was just one of many myths from ancient times* and/or *(ii) that Noah's Flood, had it historically happened, must have been just a little local flood anyway.*

Christians, however, know that the Biblical narrative about the Flood of Noah as depicted in the *Genesis Creation Record* can anyway be trusted as authentic, valid and true is because *Jesus Christ said so, and that settles it.* Jesus has warned:

> *"But as the days of NOAH were, so shall be the coming of the Son of Man. For as in the days before the FLOOD, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day NOAH entered into the ARK And they did not know until the FLOOD came and took them all away. So also will be the coming of the Son of Man."*
>
> [Matthew24:37-39MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

3. **Other references to Noah and/or the Flood of Noah.**

3.1 **Isaiah.** *"For this is as the waters of Noah to Me; for as I swore that the waters of Noah should no more go over the earth, so I have sworn from being angry with you and from rebuking you."*
[Isaiah54:9MKJV].

3.2 **Ezekiel.** *"And though these three men, Noah, Daniel, and Job, were in it, they should deliver only their own souls by their righteousness, says the Lord Jehovah ... though Noah, Daniel, and Job were in it, as I live, says the Lord Jehovah, they shall deliver neither son nor daughter. They shall only deliver their own souls by their righteousness."*
[Ezekiel14:14; 20MKJV].

3.3 **Luke.** *"And as it was in the days of Noah, so it also shall be in the days of the Son of Man. They ate, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark; and the flood came and destroyed them all."*
[Luke 17:26-27MKJV].

3.4 **Author of Hebrews.** *"By faith Noah, having been warned by God of things not yet seen, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house, by which he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness which is according to faith."*
[Hebrews11:7MKJV].

3.5 **Peter.** *"... to disobeying ones, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was being prepared (in which a few, that is, eight souls were saved through water) ... And He did not spare the old world, but saved Noah the eighth one, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly."*
[1Peter3:20; 2Peter2:5MKJV].

4. **Summary.** I am not surprised when agnostics, skeptics and postmodernists (Christian atheists) object to the *Genesis*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Creation Account and the worldwide *Flood of Noah* as an old, obsolete Jewish myth, but Christians in support of 'Darwinian Creationism' ('Creative Evolution') and who are thus still denying the fact of Noah's Flood are actually preaching heresy and should be corrected; the historicity of the *Genesis Creation Account* is today borne out by:

4.1 Biblical Archaeological evidence (e.g., excavations in the Middle East, North Africa and Israel).

4.2 The teachings of Jesus Christ (who never lied) who clearly vouched for the authenticity of the story about Noah's Flood by affirming the actual event of a FLOOD involving NOAH and an ARK in Matthew24:37-39.

4.3 The worldwide fossil-record as evidence of a worldwide flood (deluge), i.e., God's way of documenting the historical fact of a Flood that has killed and buried in sediment animals *en masse* on a scale unprecedented in the history of the world. Even our own Karoo-formation in the Northern Cape province (South Africa) reportedly still hides a 'guesstimated' billions of fossil-fragments waiting to be excavated.

4.4 That, had Noah's Flood been only a 'little local flood' then God would have been in serious breach of His promise to Noah to never destroy the world with a worldwide flood again (remember the rainbow covenant?) since ever since Noah little local floods have been destroying communities and people all over the world for centuries; the most recent enormous one the Indonesian tsunami of 2004 etc.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 14

FLOOD LEGENDS OF THE WORLD

A Worldwide Flood Uncannily Affirmed by the Legends of the Nations

1. **Introduction.** Obviously, an event and catastrophe like the *Biblical Flood* ought to have elicited conversations among communities about it for many centuries afterwards. According to B. Nelson (*'The Deluge Story in Stone'* – 1968) a study of the flood-legends of many (41) nations has produced some remarkable results:

1.1 **Nations Involved in the study.** *Assyria-Babylonia; Alaska; Andaman Island; Asia Minor; Aztecs; Brazil; Cherokee; China; Cree; Egypt; Lenape; Lithuania; Leward Islands; Mandan; Michoacan; Nicaragua; Papagos; Esquimaux (Canada); Fiji; Hawaii; Greece; India; Italy; Lapland; Lenni [Mexico]; Persia; Peru; Pimas; Russia; Scandinavia; Sumatra; Syria; Takoe; Thlinkut; Toltecks & Wales.*

1.2 **Similarities between nations discovered in the study.**

- The story of destruction by a flood (Told by 41 nations).
- Some people saved (Told by 38 nations).
- A boat saved them (Told by 36 nations).
- Universal destruction by a flood (Told by 24 nations).
- One family was favoured to survive the flood (Told by 15 nations).

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

- The flood came as a result of peoples' transgressions (Told by 14 nations).
- The flood was engineered by divine-intervention (Told by 10 nations).
- Birds were sent out first, then afterwards (Told by 9 nations).
- Animals were also saved by the boat (Told by 8 nations).
- The survivors worshipped God as soon as they left the boat (Told by 7 nations).
- The boat came to rest in a mountainous area (Told by 6 nations).
- After the survivors had left the boat God visited the saved with His favour (Told by 5 nations).

[*'International Standard Bible Encyclopaedia'*, Vol.2 p.822, as quoted in Vance Ferrell, B.A., M.A., B.D. *Science vs. Evolution*. Evolution Facts Inc. 2001. Also see evolution-facts.com].

2. **Jesus Christ affirmed the Flood of Noah and veracity of the Bible (!).** As mentioned earlier:

> *"But as the days of Noah were, so shall be the coming of the Son of Man. For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day Noah entered into the ark. And they did not know until the flood came and took them all away. So also will be the coming of the Son of Man."*
>
> [Matthew 24:37-39MKJV].

3. **Point to ponder.** Jesus Christ never lied.

References

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

1. Nelson, B. *Flood Legends of the World.* 'International Standard Bible Encyclopaedia', Vol.2 p.822, as quoted in Vance Ferrell, B.A., M.A., B.D. *Science vs. Evolution.* Evolution Facts Inc. 2001. [Also see evolution-facts.com].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter15

GIANTS IN THE BIBLE

There Really Were Giants in Those Days

1. **Giants in the Bible.** The Bible teaches that there were giants in the days of old:

> *"There were giants in the earth in those days. And also after that, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men, and they bore to them, they were mighty men who existed of old, men of renown."*
>
> [Genesis6:4MKJV].

1.1 **Goliath.** He may have been anything between (i) 258+ cm (8'6") tall according to the Jewish cubit* and (ii) 318+cm (10'6") tall according to the Egyptian cubit*.

> *"And a champion named Goliath came out of the Philistines camp; he was from Gath. His height was six cubits and a span. And a bronze helmet was on his head, and he was armed with scaled armor. And the weight of the coat was five thousand shekels of bronze. And greaves of bronze were on his legs, and a bronze javelin was between his shoulders. And the staff of his spear was like a weaver's beam. And his spear's head weighed six hundred shekels of iron. And the shield bearer went in front of him."*
>
> [1Samuel17:4-7MKJV].

*Cubit: Israel: 43cm (17") / Egyptian: 53cm (21").

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

1.2 **Og (King of Bashan).** Depending on which 'cubit' is used, his bedstead may have been anything between 3.9m or 4.8m long x 1.72m or 2.13m wide.

1.3 **Other Giants.** Other giants from the Bible were *Ishbibenob, Saph,* the brother of *Goliath the Gittite;* and the *Gath giant* with six fingers on each hand and six toes on each foot.

"And Ishbi-benob, who was of the sons of the giant, the weight of whose spear was three hundred shekels of bronze in weight. And he being girded with a new sword thought to kill David. But Abishai the son of Zeruiah came to his aid, and struck the Philistine, and killed him. Then the men of David swore to him, saying, You shall not go out to battle with us any more, so that you do not put out the light of Israel. And it happened after this there was again a battle with the Philistines at Gob. Then Sibbechai the Hushathite killed Saph, who was of the sons of the giant. And there was again a battle with the Philistines in Gob, where Elhanan of Bethlehem, the son of Jaare-oregim, killed one of Goliath the Gittite, the staff of whose spear was like a weaver's beam. And there was yet again a battle in Gath. And there was a man of stature who had six fingers on each hand, and six toes on each foot, twenty-four in number. And he also was born to the giant."

[2Samuel21:16-20MKJV].

2. **Flavius Josephus.** The respected Jewish historian Flavius Josephus (37 A.D. – 100 A.D.) writes as follows:

"There (in Hebron) were till then left the race of giants, who had bodies so large, and countenances so entirely different from other men, that they were surprising to the sight and terrible to the hearing. The bones of these men are still shown to this very day, unlike to any credible relations of other men."

[Josephus: 111].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Some skeptics tell us that the word 'giant' actually denotes 'great' ('important') and not necessarily 'big'; but how disingenuous: Why would OG (King of Bashan) then have such an enormous bedstead made; and why would Goliath, the Philistine giant, bother with such heavy armour and weapons just because he was 'important'?

References

1. Josephus, Flavius. *Antiquities of the Jews: Giants.* Translator: William Whiston M.A. (Cambridge). Also see 'Josephus', Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 16

HOW BIBLICAL ARCHAEOLOGY ATTESTS TO THE HISTORICITY OF THE BIBLE

Hezekiah's 2722-Year-Old Tunnel Still Visited by Tourists Today

1. **Old Testament History.** The *Jewish Virtual Library* writes as follows on the events that transpired at Jerusalem seven centuries before the birth of Christ:

"These events occurred in the year 701 BCE, when the Assyrian king laid siege to Jerusalem. The Gihon Spring, which was outside the city, confronted King Hezekiah with a double dilemma: to ensure water for the besieged city, yet to deny the source of the water to the Assyrian forces. The Bible describes Hezekiah's solution:

'It was Hezekiah who stopped up the spring of water of Upper Gihon, leading it downward west of the City of David'

*[2 Chronicles 32:30 *].*

"The waters of the Gihon were diverted into the Gai wadi by means of a tunnel 533 meters (581 yards) long, which was hewed from both ends simultaneously, probably along the course of a natural cleft in the rock. An inscription in the rock at the end of the tunnel describes the completion of the project."

[Jewish Virtual Library].

*Unfamiliar translation of 2Chronicles32:30, but it is corroborated by the ASV, RSV, YLT, KJV, MKJV, GNB etc.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Please note:

- The tunnel was hewn from solid rock from both ends simultaneously seven centuries before the birth of Christ.
- The tunnel was 533 metres (583 yds) long diverted from the *Spring of Gihon* downward west of the *City of David (Jerusalem).*

*701 BCE: 701 B.C.

2. **The Tunnel still exists today.** This tunnel can be visited (and walked) by tourists and is considered a monument not only to the Israeli innovation of the time but also to the historicity and authenticity of the Bible. It (i) ensured water for the besieged city while, at the same time, (ii) denying the source of water to the attacking Assyrian forces.

References

1. BiblePlaces.com *Photo: Hezekiah's Tunnel.* Online 2021.
2. Pinterest.com. *Map: Hezekiah's Tunnel.* Online 2021.
3. JewishVirtualLibrary.com. *Hezekiah's Tunnel.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 17

HOW MANY ADAMS IN HISTORY?

Was There Really a 'Second Adam'?

1. **Darwinian Theory.** This theory has failed miserably to explain the origin of the Cosmos and that of man. In fact, Darwinists deny the existence of such a man as 'Adam', the 'federal head' of humanity, entirely. So, how the first man (and women) must have emerged spontaneously by some peculiar random accident (from some fictional 'primordial soup' of chemicals) remains the greatest mystery of so-called 'Evolutionary Theory'.

2. **'Life' according to the Bible.** Life (from a Biblical point of view) can, in short, be described as the three types of (i) BIOS life, (ii) PSUCHE life and (iii) ZOE life (Greek, from the New Testament). Some notes:

2.1 **'BIOS' Life.** This refers to the basic, organic (biological, physical) life of mankind preoccupied only with its *biological existence* and survival in this natural, material world.

2.2 **'PSUCHE' Life.** This refers to the *psychological life* of mankind involving mankind's human soul as expressed by *mind, emotion and will,* perhaps that which separates man from the animals and especially from the primates.

2.3 **ZOE Life.** This refers to the uncreated, eternal and divine life that belongs to the uncreated God (the 'I AM') of Moses and Mt. Sinai exclusively.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

3. **What Adam has lost.** It would appear (from Biblical studies and anthropological observations) that, with the fall of man in Eden, Adam's fall from grace surely has brought great tragedy in terms of mankind's options for the future at the time and for the rest of history ('his story').

Be that as it may, Adam's fall from grace as the federal head of the human race (whom the Bible refers to as the 'first Adam'), has led for all intents and purposes to the failure of the 'species' he represented, as lamented by Job:

> *"If I covered my transgressions as Adam, by hiding mine iniquity in my bosom: Did I fear a great multitude, or did the contempt of families terrify me, that I kept silence, and went not out of the door?"*
>
> [Job31:33-34].

The Bible teaches that Jesus Christ, the 'last Adam', has ushered in a new species of man under His watch, and in so doing creating brand new options for the future for those who would accept His offer of Redemption:

> *"For as in* [THE FIRST] *Adam all die, even so in Christ all will be made alive ... And so it is written, 'The first man, Adam, became a living soul,' the last Adam* [JESUS] *was a life-giving Spirit."*
>
> [1Corinthians 15:22,45].

As the *first Adam* (the 'Adam' from the Garden of Eden) had become the fallen federal head of the human race (biologically driven: BIOS) so the *last Adam* (Jesus Christ) had become the new conquering federal head of the new race (spirit driven: ZOE).

References

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

1. DoNotDepart.com. *Gk. BIOS, PSUCHE & ZOE Life.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 18

TEN EMPIRICAL PROOFS THAT GOD IS REAL

Evidence for God Everywhere We Look

1. The Reality of the BIBLE. The psalmist writes:

> *"The Lord gave the word: great was the company of those that published it."*
>
> [Psalm68:11KJV].
>
> *"The Words of Jehovah are pure Words, like silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times."*
>
> [Psalm12:6KJV].
>
> *"The heaven and the earth shall pass away, but My Words shall not pass away."*
>
> [Matthew24:35MKJV].

As I write the Bible is still considered the world's bestseller. Writes Wikipedia:

> *"With estimated total sales of over five billion copies, it is widely considered to be the best-selling book of all time.[4][6][7] As of the 2000s, it sells approximately 100 million copies annually." [8][9].*
>
> [Wikipedia].

2. **The Cosmos.** To this day I am waiting for the atheist, secular humanist, evolutionist and/or philosopher that will coherently explain to us (outside the ambit of Bible history and revelation):

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

-Why is there something (e.g., a Universe, galaxies, solar systems, space, planets, people, animals, plants etc,) instead of nothing?

-Where did the Cosmos come from?
-Where did we come from?
-Why are were here?
-Where are we going?
Is there hope for planet Earth?
Is there life after death?
Why can't so-called 'Evolution' *(sic)* get it right, i.e., why is there still, after so-called *'millions of years of progressive Evolution',* still a 100% mortality rate for every generation in every nation?

Pitted against the futility of the atheist-evolutionist's pathetic response (If any at all) to such questions, the Christian offers just about the most coherent response to date. For instance, is it clear that:

- According to scientists themselves, science only knows about 5% of what is going on in the Universe with the rest (95%) *'undetectable by scientific instruments dark matter & dark energy'.* Furthermore, do scientists (e.g., marine biologists etc.) concede that they only know about 10%-20% of what is going on in the oceans of the Earth.

- God may just be obscured from their view and/or scientific observations from the 80% to 90% of the oceans and 95% of the Cosmos the scientists still know nothing about. Even had they 100% knowledge about the oceans and the Cosmos (best-case scenario) they still might not observe or see God ... to use an allegory, who in his right mind would

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

look and search for Henry Ford in the engine of a Ford automobile?

The Bible teaches:

"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth."
[Genesis1:1MKJV].

"Who has measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and measured out the heavens with a span? And who has shut up the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance?"
[Isaiah40:12MKJV].

"So says Jehovah God, He who created the heavens and stretched them out, spreading out the earth and its offspring; He who gives breath to the people on it and spirit to those who walk in it."
[Isaiah42:5MKJV].

"I have made the earth, and created man on it; I with My hands have stretched out the heavens; and all their host have I commanded."
[Isaiah45:12MKJV].

" ... seek Him who created the Pleiades and Orion, and who turned the deep darkness into the morning and He darkened the day into night. Seek Him who calls for the waters of the sea, and pours them out on the face of the earth; Jehovah is His name."
[Amos5:8MKJV].

"O Lord, You are worthy to receive glory and honor and power, because You created all things, and for Your will they are and were created ... and swore by Him who lives forever and ever, who created the heaven and the things in it, and the earth and the things in it, and the sea and the things in it, that there should no longer be time."
[Revelation4:11; 10:6MKJV].

3. **The Reality of PLANET EARTH.** The Bible says:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"He stretches out the north over the empty place, and He hung the earth on nothing."

[Job26:7].

Check out the image of the earth above ... it is suspended in deep space. In other words, it was 'hung on nothing', exactly as the Bible predicted centuries before modern (optical & radio) telescopes and the science of modern astronomy were founded.

4. **The Reality of the SEVEN DAY WEEK.** God made the heavens and the earth in six days and on the seventh day He 'rested' (stopped creating); the seven-day week has been in full force ever since ... why won't or can't anyone change it? [Genesis1:1-31; 2:1-3].

5.**The Reality of ZIONISM.** God promised Abraham (Abram > Abraham > Isaac >Jacob > Israel):

"And Jehovah said to Abram, Go out of your country, and from your kindred, and from your father's house into a land that I will show you. And I will make you a great nation. And I will bless you and make your name great. And you shall be a blessing. And I will bless those that bless you and curse the one who curses you. And in you shall all families of the earth be blessed."

[Genesis12:1-3MKJV].

The Prophet Isaiah warns:

"This burden was in the year that King Ahaz died: Rejoice not, O Philistia, all of you, that the rod of your striking is broken. For a viper comes forth from the root of a snake, and his fruit shall be a fiery flying serpent. And the first-born of the poor shall feed, and the needy shall lie down in safety; and I will kill your root with famine, and he shall slay your remnant. Howl, O gate! Cry, O city! O Philistia, all of you, are melted away; for from the north a

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

smoke comes, and no straggler in his ranks. What shall one then answer the messengers of the nation? That Jehovah has founded Zion, and the poor of His people shall trust in it."

[Isaiah14:28-32].

6. **The Miracle of BIRTH.** Within an hour after the birth of my son in 1979 (and the same with the birth of my daughter in 1981) I would have given my life for a little person whom I, at that moment, didn't know from Adam, an experience and an emotion neither secular psychology, science, scientism, evolutionism or secular philosophy can ever hope to explain.

This phenomenon, i.e., the miracle of birth, vividly demonstrates the miracle of birth and wonder of divine Creation and illustrates the futility of the religious cult of atheism-evolutionism that doggedly believes in 'death-after-death' and impotency of Darwinism that, after, 'millions of years of progressive Evolution', still cannot get it right as it struggles with a 100% mortality rate for mankind in every generation in every nation.

The miracle of birth almost daily shows that life is more than a collection of cells, bones, nerves, skin, hair, blood, water and a brain housing a motley collection of 'thinking atoms'; it affirms the Biblical fact that the physical body of man houses an immortal spirit created by God and cherished by our Heavenly Father.

7. **The Reality of the Genesis FLOOD & ARK of NOAH.** Skeptics, atheist-evolutionists (and even Christian atheists or postmodernists!) are doing their very best to deny and dismiss the existence of *Noah, the Flood of Noah and the Ark of the Flood* as described in the Bible and will invariably in debates and arguments (about the topic) write that kind of history off as (unreliable & useless) ancient 'Jewish myths', 'legends' and 'tales'.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

However, the historicity of the Biblical account of *Noah, the Flood and the Ark* is affirmed over and over again in the Bible:

7.1. GENESIS: The *Genesis Account* of Noah and Noah's Ark & Flood. [Genesis5:29 to Genesis10:32].

7.2 1CHRONICLES: *"Adam, Seth, Enos, 1Ch 1:2 Cainan, Mahalaleel, Jered, Enoch, Methuselah, Lamech, Noah, Shem, Ham, and Japheth."* [1Chronicles1:1-4MKJV].

7.3 ISAIAH: God speaks through the prophet:

"For this is as the waters of Noah to Me; for as I swore that the waters of Noah should no more go over the earth, so I have sworn from being angry with you and from rebuking you."

[Isaiah 54:9MKJV].

7.4 EZEKIEL: God speaks through the prophet:

"And though these three men, Noah, Daniel, and Job, were in it, they should deliver only their own souls by their righteousness, says the Lord Jehovah ... though Noah, Daniel, and Job were in it, as I live, says the Lord Jehovah, they shall deliver neither son nor daughter. They shall only deliver their own souls by their righteousness."

[Ezekiel14:14,20MKJV].

7.5 HEBREWS (EPISTLE):

"By faith Noah, having been warned by God of things not yet seen, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house, by which he condemned the world and became heir of the righteousness which is according to faith."

[Hebrews11:7MKJV].

7.6 PETER (EPISTLE):

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"For Christ also once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God, indeed being put to death in the flesh, but made alive in the Spirit; in which also He went and preached to the spirits in prison, to disobeying ones, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was being prepared (in which a few, that is, eight souls were saved through water); which figure now also saves us, baptism; not a putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ; who is at the right hand of God, having gone into Heaven, where the angels and authorities and powers are being subjected to Him."

[1Peter3:18-22MKJV].

"For if God did not spare sinning angels, but thrust them down into Tartarus, and delivered them into chains of darkness, being reserved to judgment. And He did not spare the old world, but saved Noah the eighth one, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly."

[2Peter2:4-5MKJV].

7.7 JESUS CHRIST:

(a) As to the Second Coming:

"But of that day and hour no one knows, no, not the angels of Heaven, but only My Father. But as the days of Noah were, so shall be the coming of the Son of Man. For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day Noah entered into the ark. And they did not know until the flood came and took them all away. So also will be the coming of the Son of Man."

[Matthew24:36-39MKJV].

(b) As to the bloodline (genealogy):

" ... the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem, the son of Noah, the son of Lamech."

[Luke3:36MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

8. **The Reality of SIN.** As regards the reality of evil and sin, the Bible teaches:

"Remember now your Creator in the days of your youth, while the evil days do not come, nor the years draw near, when you shall say, I have no pleasure in them ... For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether it is good, or whether evil."

[Ecclesiastes12:1, 14MKJV].

"*But if your eye is evil, your whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is that darkness!"*

[Matthew6:23MKJV].

"Even so every good tree brings forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree brings forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruits, nor can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit ... And Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said, Why do you think evil in your hearts? ... Offspring of vipers! How can you, being evil, speak good things? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks. A good man out of the good treasure of the heart brings out good things; and an evil man out of the evil treasure brings out evil things."

[Matthew7:17-18; 9:4; 12:34-35MKJV].

"And this is the message which we have heard from Him and declare to you, that God is light, and in Him is no darkness at all. If we say that we have fellowship with Him and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His Word is not in us."

[1John1:5-10MKJV].

"Come now, and let us reason together, says Jehovah; though your sins are as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they are red like crimson, they shall be like wool. If you are willing and obedient, you shall eat the good of the land; but if you refuse and

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

rebel, you shall be devoured with the sword; for the mouth of Jehovah has spoken."

[Isaiah1:18-20MKJV].

9. **The Reality of SPIRITUAL REGENERATION.** 'Spiritual Regeneration' is one of the miracles of a relationship with Jesus Christ and it is wrought by the mysterious Holy Spirit of God ... many may refer to it as the 'born again experience'. The Bible teaches:

"But as many as received Him, He gave to them authority to become the children of God, to those who believe on His name, who were born, not of bloods, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but were born of God."

[John1:12-13MKJV].

"For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision has any strength, nor uncircumcision, but a new creation."

[Galatians6:15MKJV].

"So that if any one is in Christ, that one is a new creature; old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new."

[2Corinthians5:17MKJV].

"But death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those who had not sinned in the likeness of the transgression of Adam, who is the type of Him who was to come ... For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ all will be made alive ... And so it is written, 'The first man, Adam, became a living soul,' the last Adam was a life-giving Spirit.' "

[Romans5:14; 1Corinthians15:22,45MKJV].

10. **The Reality of DEATH.** Death is a fact of life that cannot be changed. Even the after 'millions of years' of so-called 'progressive Evolution' (yeah right!) the mortality rate for every generation and in every nation is still a solid 100% ... clearly 'progressive Evolution' did not progress even over all the millennia at all. The reason for it is plain to see, as the Bible teaches:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And as it is appointed to men once to die, but after this the judgment."

[Hebrews9:27MKJV].

11. CONCLUSION & ADMONITION:

Jesus Christ as the presiding CHIEF JUSTICE for the Great White Throne Judgment. In the light of these empirical proofs for the existence of God (by no means an exhaustive list) does the atheist-evolutionist have an excuse for not believing in God, or will the atheist-evolutionist be able to stand successfully before Jesus Christ at the Great White Throne Judgment 'justified' and declared 'not guilty' on the grounds of 'ignorance' or 'innocent' wilful unbelief alone? What does the Bible teach?

11.1 No other Name by which we may be saved.

"This [JESUS CHRIST] is the Stone which you builders have counted worthless, and He has become the Head of the Corner. And there is salvation in no other One; for there is no other name under Heaven given among men by which we must be saved ... Therefore I [JESUS CHRIST] said to you that you shall die in your sins, for if you do not believe that I AM, you shall die in your sins."

[Acts4:11-12; John8:24MKJV].

11.2 Jesus Christ the presiding Chief Justice at the Great White Throne Judgment.

"For as [GOD] the Father raises the dead and makes alive, even so the Son of Man [JESUS CHRIST] makes alive whomever He wills. For [GOD] the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son [JESUS], so that all should honor the Son [JESUS], even as they honor [GOD] the Father. He who does not honor the Son [JESUS] does not honor [GOD] the

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Father who sent Him. Truly, truly, I say to you, He who hears My Word and believes on Him [GOD THE FATHER] who sent Me [JESUS CHRIST] has everlasting life and shall not come into condemnation, but has passed from death to life."

[John5:21-24MKJV].

11.3 **Those ashamed of Christ will stand ashamed on Judgment Day.**

"For whoever shall be ashamed of Me and of My Words, the Son of Man shall be ashamed of him when He shall come in His own and in His Father's glory, and that of the holy angels."

[Luke9:26MKJV].

11.4 **There can be no excuse.** The Bible warns:

"For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who suppress the truth in unrighteousness, because the thing which may be known of God is clearly revealed within them, for God revealed it to them. For the unseen things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being realized by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, for them to be without excuse. Because, knowing God, they did not glorify Him as God, neither were thankful. But they became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing to be wise, they became fools."

[Romans1:18-22MKJV].

References

1. Wikipedia. *The Bible.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 19

HOW OLD IS THE COSMOS?

Biblical Creationism vs. Uniformitarianism

1. **Proposition #1.** Evangelical Christians by and large believe that, in Genesis, God created mature, not embryonic, prototypes in species; I have never heard of an egg (from a chicken) that has hatched itself to adulthood, or of a wildebeest calf that nursed itself to the full stature of a mature wildebeest without its mother ... just ask Sir David Attenborough. One after the other wildlife programme on DSTV (mostly presented by evolutionists, mind you) tells us how absolutely helpless most pups, cubs and calves of animals are in the wild and how dependent they are on their mothers for the initial (growing up) stages of their lives.

If you are a Christian, then surely you must realise that Adam, for instance, immediately after his creation must have displayed all the attributes of a mature male specimen of his species, yet, technically speaking could he not have been older than 24 hours on Day 6 of Creation. Now, whether Adam had a 'navel' or not is the type of vexing question which Charles Spurgeon (1834-1892) has warned us against, i.e., the *'committing of spiritual suicide by fretting and squabbling over metaphysical subtleties'.* (My paraphrasing).

Similarly, early in Genesis, God may have created a 'brand-new' Universe, but with all the attributes and trappings of a 'mature' Universe and with the decay rates of the elements, for instance, pre-ordered. The whole debate between a young versus an old Universe is a debate between those who believe in divine miracles and those who don't, and, from where I

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

stand, a Christian who doesn't believe in the Biblical miracles (from the Old & New Testaments) is not a Christian ... he/she is a ('postmodernist') *Christian Atheist.*

Of course, God *could* have made the Universe in '13.8 billion years' ... such feats are called the fruit of 'omnipotence' and to deny that possibility would be to deny the omnipotence of God. But, in retrospect, what kind of 'omnipotence' is it when the same God (allegedly) cannot create a Universe in six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each only about 6000 years ago simply by speaking a single sentence and applying the power of His word?

I therefore want to stress the point that the person who believes in an 'omnipotence' that can create a Universe in 13.8 billion years but not in an 'omnipotence' that can create a Universe in six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each does not understand 'omnipotence' ... period. Are there really *different degrees* of 'omnipotence' among the 'gods' and in the Universe? (Heaven forbids!).

For us this mighty Universe may appear as solid in relief and function as the proverbial 'rock', but for all we know to God it may be no more than a gigantic hologram as cosmically ethereal as a whiff of smoke which He can command to implode (and with a 'bang') at any time He wishes to.

2. **Proposition #2.** Jesus Christ did not need 'millions of years' to change water into wine, multiply a few loaves and fishes for thousands to eat or learn to walk on water. He was master of the wind and rain and perfectly in control of space, time and matter as Creator of the world; He even raised Lazarus from the dead. Either we accept these Biblical miracles, or we don't; either we are Christians, or we are *Christian atheists* ... period.

I have a serious problem with a worldview that says that God was 'almighty' enough to create a Cosmos in '13.8 billion years' but not 'almighty' enough to do it in six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each only 6 000 years ago; what bizarre brand of

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

'divine omnipotence' is that? How 'omnipotent' is this God really?

3. **Proposition #3.** Christians with a 'post-modernist' approach to the Scriptures should guard against discarding the miraculous element in the Old & New Testaments just for the sake of 'secular humanist, political correctness' in order not to the disturb the popular 'Evolution science' narrative. Are we after truth or after popularity?

4. **Critical thinking.** Some points to ponder:

4.1 When those who ask, *"If your Universe really was created by Jesus Christ in six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each about 6 000 years ago, why does it look so old as if it was created by Evolution 13.8 billion years ago?"* I then have no other option but to reciprocate in kind: *"If your Universe really was created by Evolution 13.8 billion years ago, then why does it look so intelligently designed and relatively young as if it was miraculously created by Jesus Christ only 6 000 years ago in six ordinary days of 24-hours each?"*

4.2 Evolutionists are inclined to say or write that the Universe is 'very old'. How can anyone know that the Universe is very old when they don't even know what an 'old Universe' is supposed to look like? First show us a really 'old Universe' so that we can compare apples with apples; the problem is that we cannot show a prototype 'old Universe' for comparison purposes, can we? Evolutionists accept an 'old Universe' in blind faith. For all we know the way the Universe appears today may be exactly what a young Universe (created in six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each about 6000 years ago) would look like.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

4.3 What about the decay rates of the elements in the *Periodic Table* ... doesn't that prove an old Universe? Why, those decay rates may have been created to show old decay rates ... it is to be expected when you want to have a mature Universe instantly and miraculously. On Day 6 of Creation the 24-years old Adam surely also must have had all the appearances and attributes of a mature, full-grown male of the species 'mankind' ... or did God first create him as a *foetus* inside some hairy primate's womb for her to nurse him and his offspring to adulthood over 'millions of years'? The evolutionist's definition of the first man:

'A person who created himself from nothing with nothing and then went on to, over time, also evolve into his mother-in-law, his wife and the rest of all the people in the world'.

P.S. If this is not science fiction, then what is?

4.4 What about the 'scientific method' and 'empiricism' ... surely scientists use sophisticated scientific instruments and scientific data to draw conclusions about the age of the Cosmos? Firstly, no scientific instrument will ever be able to detect or measure the dynamics of a miraculous Universe created miraculously; one might just as well depend on a cheap metal ruler to measure its own length in millimetres in a room where the temperature fluctuates all day long between -10° and +100°C. No matter how that ruler may contract or expand in sympathy with the room's temperature, such a ruler will always be 300 millimetres long. Try and calibrate the ruler and the calibrating instrument suddenly begins to lie to you all the way without you realising it.

All the noise about the 'scientific method' and 'empiricism' sounds a bit hollow considering the falsifiability of a science theory; how are we expected to go back in time

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

'billions of years' to verify the age of the evolutionists' old Universe? How are we to travel 'billions of light-years' into the Cosmos to verify the astronomical distances and sizes of the galaxies and the Cosmos? How are we expected to go back in time 'millions of years' to verify the evolutionists' age of the earth or first appearances of the *'hominid'* that allegedly shared a 'common ancestor' with modern man?

Isn't there some kind of consensus among respectable scientists that *unfalsifiable theories* are not worth much? For instance, which decent court of law will accept the fossil remains *Mrs. Ples* (probably some kind of an extinct ape) as *prima facie* evidence that man shares a common ancestor with the primates? Was she even ever married? Did she have children, and if so indeed, where are there fossils?

4.5 Most modern scientists (cosmologists etc.) today have more or less accepted (and probably themselves teach) Albert Einstein's *Relativity Theories* as credible, workable theories. In other words, such scientists (many of them probably atheists & evolutionists) have bought into a science that teaches all kinds of weird *time-warps* connected to speeds approaching the speed of light and involving phenomena like the *Lorentz Contraction*, *time-delay* etc. I am reminded of the limerick:

There was a lady called 'Bright'
who travelled faster than light.
She went out one day,
In a relative way ...
And came back the previous night!
[Author unknown].

The point is that such scientific method and empiricism-driven scientists have no problem waxing lyrical at symposiums over *Star Trek* type science-fiction concepts

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

describing all kinds of 'wormholes' in the Cosmos, 'time-warps', 'time-horizons', 'teleportation', 'holograms' etc., yet they have a problem with a 'young Universe' and a 'young earth' created in six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each about 6000 years ago?

The million-rouble question: How come they can muster the intellectual prowess and mental imagery to understand Albert Einstein, Carl Sagan, Stephen Hawking and the flights of imagination of people like H.G. Wells, Jules Verne, Brian Aldiss, Isaac Asimov and Ray Bradbury ... but cannot understand Jesus Christ?

The answer is probably simple: All these exotic names (authors, scientists) demanded from us was that their books should be purchased, and their stories should be read; all Jesus Christ demanded from us was to *repent and believe the Gospel ... a price much too high for them to pay.*

4.6 God can do far above that which we as humans, in our wildest of imaginations, could ever endeavour to pray or think. In other words, were we for instance to imagine the most outrageous of miracles or wonders to happen, God would be able to do it (and far more!) provided it would be in His ideal *Divine Will* for Him to allow.

In other words, if I can think (imagine) a fully-functioning Universe created in six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each about 6000 years ago, then the Bible teaches that God can (for argument's sake) deliver that kind of miracle *and more;* if not, then the Bible would be lying and deceiving us, and God could not do anything and everything would not be possible for Him to do ... a philosophical contradiction in Christian Theology.

"Now unto him that is <u>able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think</u>, according to the power that worketh in us."

[Ephesians3:20KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

References

1. Wikipedia. *Christian Atheism.* Online 2021.
2. Wikipedia. *Science Fiction.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 20

NEW TESTAMENT AFFIRMATION OF THE GENESIS CREATION ACCOUNT

How the New Testament Affirms the Hebrew Bible's Genesis Account of Creation

1. **Affirmation of the Genesis Creation Account.** *S*howing that the *New Testament* does not contradict the *Old Testament (Hebrew Bible)* i.r.o. Biblical historicity & authenticity (examples):

1.1 MATTHEW. Affirming the existence of e.g., Abraham & David [Matthew1:1]; Isaac & Jacob [Matthew1:2]; Moses & Elijah [Matthew17:3]; Noah & Noah's Flood [Matthew24:37-39].

1.2 MARK. Affirming the existence of e.g., Elijah [Mark6:15]; Moses [Mark7:10]; Abraham, Isaac & Jacob [Mark12:26]; David [Mark2:25].

1.3 LUKE. Affirming the existence of e.g., Elijah [Luke1:17]; Abraham [Luke1:55]; Isaac & Jacob [Luke3:34]; Moses [Luke2:22]; Noah & Noah's Flood [Luke3:36 & Luke17:26-27]; Enoch [Luke3:37]; Abel [Luke11:51]; Methuselah [Luke3:37]; David [Luke1:27]; Historical genealogy of Jesus Christ from His birth traced back to Adam along David's lineage [Luke3:23-38].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

1.4 JOHN*. Moses [John1:17]; Elijah [John1:21]; Jacob [John4:5]; David [John7:42].

*John the Beloved (not John the Baptist).

1.5 ACTS. Abraham, Isaac & Jacob [Acts7:8].

1.6 EPISTLES (PAUL). David [Romans1:3]; Moses [Romans5:14]; Adam [Romans5:14]; 1Timothy2:13]; Isaac [Romans9:7]; Jacob & Esau [Romans9:13]; Elijah [Romans11:2]; Eve [2Corinthians11:3 & 1Timothy2:13]; Aaron [Hebrews7:11]; Abel & Cain [Hebrews11:4]; Gideon, Barak, Samson, Jephthah, Samuel [Hebrews11:32].

1.7 EPISTLES (GENERAL). Abraham & Isaac [James2:21]; Noah [1Peter 3:20; 2Peter2:5]; Cain [1John3:12 & Jude 1:11]; Adam & Enoch [Jude1:14].

1.8 REVELATION*. David [Revelation5:5 & 22:16]; Moses [Revelation15:3].

*The Revelation of Jesus Christ as disclosed to John the Beloved on the Isle of Patmos.

1.9 JESUS CHRIST. Jesus of Nazareth (the Christ) Himself affirmed the historicity and authenticity of the Biblical record (including the original *Genesis Creation Record)* from the *Old Testament (Hebrew Bible)* as follows:

- Affirms the existence of *Adam & Eve* as the first couple ('in the beginning') in the discussion on the laws governing marriage and divorce [Matthew19:3-8].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

- Affirms the existence of *Noah, Noah's Flood and Noah's Ark* in the warning on the imminent 'Days of Noah' at the end of days [Matthew24:37-39]; and

- Affirms the 'posthumous' existence of *Old Testament saints* by the appearing of Moses & Elijah with Him in conversation on the Mt. of Transfiguration [Matthew17:1-9].

2. **Implications of all these Affirmations.** It does not make sense that some Christians would (on the one hand) accept the veracity of Christ's life and sacrifice and New Testament history and doctrines and (on the other hand) only then to adopt a *Darwinian Creation Model ('Theistic Evolutionism' or 'Creative Evolution')* while dismissing the *Genesis Creation Account, Noah's Flood* and the *Ark* as myths and historically obsolete Jewish legends.

Bear in mind that Jesus Christ Himself, the Saviour who had charged the Pharisees with having as their father the Devil (a liar and murderer) Himself never lied, and here it is patently clear that Jesus Christ firmly attested to the truth of an 'Adam and Eve' creation and Noah's Ark and Flood, otherwise He could be charged with being a liar with Satan, the 'father of lies', as His father.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 21

THE WONDER OF 'ZOE' VERSUS 'BIOS' LIFE

Spiritual vs. Physical Creation

1. **Meaning of BIOS Life.** 'BIOS Life' can be described as that dimension of biological life that focuses on the biological field of study of living organisms and those principles that govern the natural phenomena and functions of DNA, the cell, zoology, ecology, genetics, human anatomy and the physiology of living systems.

In Christianity, a principle in the field of *Biogenesis* insists that there can be *no LIFE from non-life,* hence the belief in a Creator, Intelligent Designer and Almighty God [Genesis1:1]. Christians believe that Jesus of Nazareth (the 'Christ' or 'Anointed One') was/is God the Father's de facto Projects Engineer responsible for the first Creation, maintenance and management of the Cosmos, exactly as the Bible teaches.

> *"God, who at many times and in many ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, has in these last days spoken to us by His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the worlds, who being the shining splendor of His glory, and the express image of His essence, and upholding all things by the word of His power, through Himself cleansing of our sins, He sat down on the right of the Majesty on high, being made so much better than the angels, as He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.*
>
> *"For to which of the angels did He say at any time, 'You are My Son, this day I have begotten You?' And again, 'I will be to Him a Father, and He shall be to Me a Son?' And again, when He brings*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

in the First-born into the world, He says, 'And let all the angels of God worship Him.' And of the angels He says, 'Who makes His angels spirits and His ministers a flame of fire.' But to the Son He says, 'Your throne, O God, is forever and ever. A scepter of righteousness is the scepter of Your kingdom. You have loved righteousness and hated iniquity, therefore God, Your God, has anointed You with the oil of gladness above Your fellows.'

"And, 'You, Lord, have laid the foundation of the earth in the beginning, and the heavens are the works of Your hands. They shall perish, but You will remain. And they shall all become old as a garment, and as a covering You shall fold them up, and they shall be changed. But You are the same, and Your years shall not fail.'

"But to which of the angels, did He say at any time, 'Sit on My right hand until I make Your enemies Your footstool?' Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for those who shall be heirs of salvation?"

[Hebrews1:1-14KJV].

2. **Addressing the Atheist's plight.** The atheist's plight will usually and in general boil down to the following three 'gripes', e.g., that Life has *(i) no meaning, (ii) no purpose and (iii) no design.*

Stuck in the ideological quandary of 'Atheism' and the religious belief-system of *death-after-death,* the atheist has interned himself voluntarily in the unsavoury dungeon of *'BIOS-life Atheism'* from which he will not escape; although the key to his prison-door of 'Bios-life Atheism' is on the inside of the door to his cell, he adamantly refuses to unlock it in fear of what his peer-group might say, thus leaving him stranded in a world where the mortality rate for all humans (according to his opinion) in all of Eternity will forever be 100%; not even his 'Darwinism' has a hope of, after *'millions and millions of years of progressive natural election, beneficial mutations, adaptation, speciation, Lamarckism, punctuated equilibrium*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

and accidental, random and brainless evolutionism' (sic) bailing him out.

No wonder Dawkins moans about the Cosmos' 'pitiless indifference'; the pitiless indifference that comes from his bleak and unsympathetic 'mantlepiece god of Atheism', a 'deity' truly 'without any purpose, meaning and design'.

After all, how can there ever be 'purpose, meaning and design' in a religious belief-system (Atheism-Evolutionism) that, at best, promises only *(i) pitiless indifference, (ii) death-after-death* and *(iii) a constant 100% mortality rate for every generation of the human race?*

3. **ZOE Life.** This life can be described as:

> *"Life; referring to the principle of life in the spirit and soul. Distinguished from bios, physical life of which zoe is the nobler word, less indifference expressing all of the highest and best which Christ is and which He gives to the saints."*
>
> [Zodhiates].

As things stand, Jesus Christ is a life-giving, quickening Spirit and exclusively the only dispenser of ZOE Life in the Universe.

> *"But now, being made free from sin, and having become slaves to God, you have your fruit to holiness, and the end everlasting life. For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord ... But the Law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death ... For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace ... And if Christ is in you, indeed the body is dead because of sin, but the Spirit is life because of righteousness ... But if the Spirit of the One who raised up Jesus from the dead dwells in you, the One who raised up Christ from the dead shall also make your mortal bodies alive by His Spirit who dwells in you."*
>
> [Romans6:22,23; 8:2,6,10-11KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I [JESUS] am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly."

[John10:10KJV].

References

1. Zodhiates, Spiros. *Zoe Life.* Greek Word Study. Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 22

MANKIND'S ROMANCE WITH THE TRIANGLE

How So Many Things Come in 'Threes'

1. **Things that come in 'Threes'.** Amazing how many things in this mysterious world come in threes, e.g.:

- Time, Space & Matter (Cosmos)
- Length, Breadth & Height (Space)
- Past, Present & Future (Time)
- Solids, Liquids & Gasses (Matter)
- Father, Son & Holy Spirit (Christian Trinity)
- Father Time, Mother Nature & Charles Darwin (Darwinism's profane triumvirate)
- Faith, Hope & Love/Charity (1Corinthians13:13).
- Gold, Incense & Myrrh (Gifts of the Magi, Matthew2:11)
- Red, Yellow & Blue (Primary Colours)
- Hammer, Anvil & Stirrup (Ear)
- Three feet (Measurement, Yard)
- Land, Sea & Air (Geography)
- Doric, Ionic & Corinthian (Greek Columns, Architecture)
- Morning, Noon & Night (A typical 24-hour day)
- Breakfast, Lunch & Dinner (Meals)
- Big Three (Churchill, Roosevelt & Stalin, WW2)
- Big Three (Nicklaus, Palmer & Player, Golf)
- Government of the People, by the People & for the People (Democracy)
- Hook, Line & Sinker (Idiom, fishing)

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

- Three R's (Reading, Writing & Arithmetic)
- Primary, Secondary & Tertiary Colours (Art)
- Tom, Dick & Harry (or Hessie, Jessie & Tessie) (The 'common man/woman in the street')
- Ear, Nose & Throat (Medicine)
- Trigonometry (*"Trigonometry is a branch of mathematics that studies relationships between side lengths and angles of triangles. The field emerged in the Hellenistic world during the 3rd century BC from applications of geometry to astronomical studies."* [Wikipedia].

P.S. This is by no means an exhaustive list.

2. **Threes in the Bible.** Considering the wonder of *threes* in nature and society, one would thus expect for that kind of fascination to be traced back to the very beginning of Creation, and indeed it does. As mentioned before, the Bible says:

2.1 **Creation.**

"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth."
[Genesis1:1MKJV].

As discussed earlier:

- 'BEGINNING': Creation of TIME (created before SPACE and MATTER otherwise *when* would you put the SPACE and the MATTER?)

- 'HEAVENS': Creation of SPACE (created before MATTER otherwise *where* would you put the MATTER?)

- 'EARTH': Creation of MATTER.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2.2 **The Messianic Mission of Jesus Christ.** Jesus Christ has come to give to those who honoured Him:

- *Beauty for ashes*
- the *Oil of Joy for mourning*
- the *Garment of Praise for a spirit of heaviness.*

2.2.1 The Messianic Prophecy (Hebrew Bible/Old Testament (Jesus Christ 'concealed').

"The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the broken hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified."

[Isaiah61:1-3KJV].

2.2.2 The Messianic Prophecy form the Old Testament fulfilled (Jesus Christ 'revealed').

"And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias.

"And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the broken hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him."

[Luke4:17-20KJV].

3. **The Great Commission.** Even the *Great Commission of Jesus Christ* to His disciples and the Christian Church at large was issued in a threefold command:

3.1 **King James Version.** *"And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen."*

[Matthew28:18-20 KJV].

3.2 **Young's Literal Translation.** *"... having gone, then, disciple all the nations, (baptizing them—to the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all, whatever I did command you,) and lo, I am with you all the days—till the full end of the age."*

[Matthew28:18-20YLT].

- Discipling the Nations
- Baptizing the disciples
- Teaching the disciples to observe all Christ's teachings.

References

1. E-Sword.org. *Young's Literal Translation of the Bible.* Online 2021.
2. Wikipedia. *Trigonometry.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 23

QUANTUM LEAP CREATION

Creation Is More Exciting Than We Can Imagine

1. **3D Graphics.** Any person acquainted with elementary computer software and graphics who presses a button can manipulate the little 3D (Microsoft) model in the bottom right corner of a Power Point slide-page at will by turning it in any conceivable direction in any which way he wants to and at any angle inside the handy little 360° circle of a feature provided. Interesting facts of software like that is that the operator will not have to wait for it for 'millions' or 'billions' of minutes or hours to 'evolve' into the 'creation' he wants it to be it responds virtually instantly (albeit subject to current cosmic norms and manufacturer's time-constraints) within seconds at his explicit wish and command.

Now, I am sure that there are more advanced graphics and models available in the field of multimedia and computer software; the technological variances between Microsoft's little Power Point model and the special effects employed to make e.g., a film like *Star Wars* must be considerable.

2. **Graphics possibilities are manifold.** The point is that the technology allows its creative and innovative users to do almost anything these days and create any kind of illusion that they want to do on computer and cinema screens ... the only limits probably are the imaginations and creativity of the users involved combined with the speed with which such available

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

computer graphics can be delivered and positioned 'on screen' with the required technical knowledge and creative dexterity.

3. **What God could possibly do.** So, I was just wondering: Why would the God of the calibre of the 'I AM!" of Moses and Mt. Sinai (who can speak worlds into existence with His mouth and multiply a few loaves and fishes within minutes enough for thousands to eat) need 'billions of years' for His divine '3D-graphics' to 'evolve' into position on the 'screen' of His majestic 'metaphysical' Cosmic canvas for the creation of a Cosmos such as ours?

I stand amazed at how enthusiastically secular scientists have bought into Albert Einstein's *Relativity Theories* and the zeal with which they teach it at college to their incredulous students. I mean, they have no difficulty (or moral qualms) in comprehending such concepts as *'black holes', 'time horizons & time warps', 'worm-holes', 'time-travel', 'particle physics', 'Relativity',* the *'Unified Field Theory'* and the mysteries of *'Quantum & Celestial Mechanics'* (e.g. *'Schrödinger's Cat', 'light photons vs. waves'* etc.) and upon request can even 'demonstrate' it deftly on their chalkboards with the aid of advanced mathematics. As mentioned before, this little limerick is an example of *modern relativistic thinking* in the world of *'Relativity'.* As already mentioned:

There was a lady called 'Bright'
Who could travel faster than light;
She went out one day in a relative way,
And came back the previous night!
- Author unknown

4. **The topsy-turvy world of the Evolution scientist.** Why are these geniuses, capable of intellectually processing the 'wondrous, profound elements' so prevalent in Nature in

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

advanced science *(Quantum Theory, General & Special Relativity etc.),* at the same time totally incapable of intellectually processing the miraculous elements prevalent in the Christian faith and the Gospel of Jesus Christ? Why are these remarkable 'pioneers' of the science frontier' having such difficulty with understanding the virgin birth of Jesus Christ and the creation of a Universe in six ordinary weekdays of 24-hours each about 6000 years ago? The Creator of the Universe says:

> *"I have made the earth, and created man on it; I with My hands have stretched out the heavens; and all their host have I commanded."*
>
> [Isaiah45:12KJV].

References

Microsoft. *3D Graphics.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 24

THE LAW OF CREATORSHIP

A Created Product or Invention Will Always Have a Superior Creator, Inventor, Maker or Manufacturer

1. **Proposition #1.** The *Laws of Physics,* respected by so many rational academics, scientists & researchers today, have, in the past century or so, revealed some interesting surprises to the discerning and inquisitive mind, which brings me to the theme of this article, i.e. *The Law of Creatorship.*

This suggests that the baker, manufacturer, creator or inventor of a cake (e.g., chef, cook, caterer, housewife etc.) himself or herself will always be *more complex* and *more intelligent* than his or her product (e.g., the cake etc.) or object of manufacture.

Likewise, the *biochemist* will e.g., be more complex & intelligent than the *sophisticated laboratory* she has installed for her company; the *industrial or projects engineer* will be more complex & intelligent than the *ore beneficiation plant* he has designed; the *nuclear scientist* will be more complex & intelligent than his powerful, state-of-the art *nuclear plant* generating electricity for a state or country.

2. **Proposition #2.** When any reasonable person thus looks up at the beauty and majesty of the Cosmos and its galaxies (and galaxy-clusters) draped like gorgeous chandeliers millions of light-years wide or considers the *Laws of Physics* comprising

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

such phenomena as *universal gravitation,* the *strong & weak nuclear forces* in quantum physics, the *Electromagnetic Spectrum, acoustics* and the *Periodic Table of Elements,* he or she stands amazed at the superlative *designing intelligence* behind it all. If this is the gorgeous and majestic product, imagine how gorgeous and majestic its Creator!

3. **Proposition #3.** The Bible teaches that God's de facto projects engineer, Jesus Christ, has created the Cosmos:

> *"God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son [JESUS] whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds."*
>
> [Hebrews1:1-2KJV].

4. **Proposition #4.** Considering the complexities, beauties, order ('cosmos') and grand (stupendous) design and majesty of creation, imagine the beauty, majesty and awesome 'brain capacity' of the mysterious intellect with the assumed I.Q. of INFINITY^{infinity} (Infinity to the power of Infinity) behind the fact of the (visible) Universe (never mind the invisible', 'transfinite' or 'metaphysical') and its wonders of time, space and matter. The great YHWH (Yahweh or Jehovah) of Moses has solemnly declared:

> *"I have made the earth, and created man on it; I with My hands have stretched out the heavens; and all their host have I commanded."*
>
> [Isaiah45:12KJV].
>
> *"So says Jehovah, Heaven is My throne, and earth My footstool. Where, then, is the house that you build for Me? And where is the place of My rest?"*
>
> [Isaiah66:1MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 25

FACTS ABOUT SCIENTISTS YOU OUGHT TO KNOW

They're Only Human After All

1. **They are fully Human.** Scientists are not a rare species of 'cyborgs' flown in from the *Andromeda Galaxy* to help us solve our problems. They are humans of flesh and blood facing challenges and standing in need of prayer and God's mercy like everybody else.

2. **They do not know Everything.** They are fallible and often make mistakes, like the time they said that man shared a 'common ancestor' with primates. The many similarities between man and the primates only affirm the fact that man shares a *common (mutual) Creator,* not 'Ancestor' with the primates.

P.S. Only God knows everything. The Bible says:

> *"The secret things belong to Jehovah our God, but the revealed things belong to us and to our sons forever, so that we may do all the words of this Law."*
>
> [Deuteronomy29:29MKJV].

3. **Many scientists in the field of science.** There are many Scientists (Christians) who work in the field of Science & Technology. See Wikipedia for *'List of Christians in Science & Technology'.* Scientists often challenge the truth & validity

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

of *Darwinism (Evolutionary Theory)*. See website *'A Scientific Dissent from Darwinism'.*

P.S. Not all scientists 'believe' in Evolution.

4. **Scientists cannot explain Infinity.** Only the Infinite Mind of God can fully grasp and explain Infinity. A finite mind (like the mind of even the brightest scientist) will never fully grasp or explain Infinity. God has an assumed I.Q. of INFINITY to the power of Infinity or expressed as $\text{INFINITY}^{\text{infinity}}$.

5. **Scientists cannot (outside of revelation from the Bible) really tell the BEGINNING and/or END of all things.**

> *"He has made everything beautiful in His time; also He has set eternity in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God makes from the beginning to the end."*
> [Ecclesiastes3:11MKJV].

6. **Scientists will, just like everybody else on Earth, one day yet stand before the Judgment Throne of God.**

> *"And I saw the dead, the small and the great, stand before God. And books were opened, and another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works."*
> [Revelation20:12MKJV].

7. **Every Scientist shall yet bow before Jesus Christ.**

> *"For it is written, 'As I live, says the Lord, every knee shall bow to Me, and every tongue shall confess to God.' "*
> [Romans14:11MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

[Philippians2: 9-11KJV].

References

1. Dissentfromdarwinism.org. *A Scientific Dissent from Darwinism.* Online 2021.
2. Wikipedia. *List of Christians in Science and Technology.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 26

CREATIVE EVOLUTION? YOU MUST BE JOKING!

'Creative Evolution': The Fancy Word For 'Darwinian Creationism'?

1. **Geologic Column.** The request, "*Show us a hole or incision in the ground that depicts the 'Geologic Column' ('Geologic Time Scale') exactly as it is supposed to look like as depicted on Evolutionists' wall-charts or in their textbooks and encyclopaedias,"* seems to have fallen on deaf ears. Does the *'Geologic Column'* even exist, or is it pure conjecture, i.e., a theoretical construct from the minds of the Evolutionists hell-bent on proving something that doesn't exist?

2. **Mrs. Ples (Sterkfontein/Maropeng, South Africa).** According to sources, Mrs./Mr. /Ms. Ples, a *'hominid'* skull found at the Sterkfontein Caves South Africa) is *'2.05 million years'* old. [Wikipedia].

Using an arbitrary figure of *70 years per generation,* the gap between *Mrs. Ples* and today's generation of humans there theoretically could have been *29 285 generations* of her species over the period; at an arbitrary *40 years per generation,* there could have been as many as *51 250 generations* of her species over the period. Question:

> *Where are the absent and missing fossils representing the guesstimated 29 285 or 51 250 transitional stages between Mrs. Ples and today's generation?* Also: *Where is the*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

evidence that Mrs. Ples was even 'married' or that she had ever had any offspring; and how come Nature preserved her skull but not the rest (probably millions of fossil fragments) of others still missing?

3. **Creative Evolution.** The critical difference (in a nutshell) between *Classical (Atheistic) Darwinism* and *Creative (Theistic) Evolution* is that the first supports the idea that 'Evolution' occurred by random and spontaneous accident without the interference or help of an 'Intelligent Designer' (Creator), while the second supports the idea that 'Evolution' happened with the help of an 'Intelligent Designer' (Creator). Do the math:

3.1 Should *Classical (Atheistic) Darwinism* ever be found to be correct (valid) then *Creative Evolution* will not fly as a viable idea as it needs God in its equation to qualify as a viable theory. P.S. Atheists do not believe in God.

3.2 Should *Classical (Atheistic) Darwinism* ever be found to be incorrect (invalid) then *Creative Evolution* will again not fly, as it needs 'Evolution' in its equation to qualify as a viable theory. P.S. In this scenario there would be no 'Evolution'.

P.S. For those who want to object to the use of the abovementioned comparison in this dichotomy of two mutually exclusive opposites as 'unethical' and not allowed in 'logic', bear in mind that it was so superflously created by the Darwinists in the first place, and not by the author, and therefore deserves to be addressed.

References

1. Wikipedia. *Australopithecus.* Online 2021.
2. Wikipedia. *Mrs. Ples.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

PART THREE:

CHRISTOLOGY: THE SAVIOUR'S SCEPTRE OF AUTHORITY

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 27

THE LAW OF THE CONSERVATION OF MASS

How Jesus Christ 'Breached' the Laws of Physics

1. **The Principle of Mass Conservation.** This principle, or *'The Law of Conservation of Mass',* is defined as follows:

> *"In physics and chemistry, the law of conservation of mass or principle of mass conservation states that for any system closed to all transfers of matter and energy, the mass of the system must remain constant over time, as the system's mass cannot change, so quantity can neither be added nor be removed. Therefore, the quantity of mass is conserved over time."*
>
> [Wikipedia].

The point is that there is just so much mass in the Universe and, as an 'isolated system', extra mass cannot, humanly speaking, be added or its current quantity be removed. Mass can change its form (into e.g., energy) etc. but can never be created or destroyed, making one wonder how it came to be in the Universe in the first place.

2. **Divine Creation.** As already mentioned several times, the Bible says:

> *"In the beginning [TIME] God created the heaven [SPACE] and the earth [MATTER]."*
>
> [Genesis1:1KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

In Christianity, and specifically in the Gospels of Matthew [Matthew14:17-21; 15:32-38] and Mark [Mark6:38-44] it is told how Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ('Anointed One') had multiplied only a few fishes and loaves of bread exponentially to literally feed thousands at a rally where Jesus, at the time, was the 'keynote speaker' for the event.

"And Jesus went out and saw a great crowd, and He was moved with compassion toward them. And He healed their sick. And evening coming on, His disciples came to Him, saying, The place is deserted and the time has already gone by. Send the crowd away so that they may go into the villages and buy food for themselves. But Jesus said to them, They do not need to leave, you give them something to eat.

"And they said to Him, We have here only five loaves and two fish. And He said, Bring them here to Me. And He commanded the crowd to recline on the grass. And He took the five loaves and the two fish, and looking up to Heaven He blessed and broke, and gave the loaves to His disciples. And the disciples gave to the crowd.

"And they all ate and were filled. And they took up twelve hand baskets full from the fragments that remained. And they who had eaten were about five thousand men, besides women and children."

[Matthew14:14-21MKJV].

"Then Jesus called His disciples and said, I have compassion on the crowd because they continue with Me for three days now and have nothing to eat. And I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way. And His disciples said to Him, From where should we get so many loaves in the wilderness, so as to fill so great a crowd? And Jesus said to them, How many loaves do you have? And they said, Seven, and a few little fish.

"And He commanded the crowd to sit on the ground. And He took the seven loaves and the fish, and gave thanks, and broke, and gave to His disciples. And the disciples gave to the crowd. And they all ate, and were filled; and they took up seven lunch baskets full of the pieces that was left. And those who ate were four thousand men, besides women and children."

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[Matthew15:32-38MKJV].

The problem is that science has said that it was scientifically impossible (and thus unlikely) for Jesus Christ to have multiplied those loaves and fishes as claimed by the authors of the two Gospels as the *Principle of Mass Conservation* states that matter cannot be created (or destroyed). It stands to reason that, if Jesus had really multiplied the loaves and fishes, He, in 'breach' of the laws of physics, must *have added matter to the preponderance of matter already in existence in the Universe at the time.*

3. **The ultimate 'Rubicon' to cross?** This miracle (Christ's multiplying of the loaves & fishes) must either accepted or rejected which may eventually prove to be the ultimate intellectual 'Rubicon' for the atheist, agnostic & skeptic to cross. Many from the world of Christendom unable to cross this 'Rubicon' have already fallen by the wayside, giving rise to such bizarre hybrid heresies as *'Christian Atheism',* the *'Jesus Seminar' (USA)* and *'Nuwe Hervormers' (South Africa).*

Scientists have, interestingly enough, conceded the theoretical possibility that even an *isolated (closed) system* such as the Universe may, after all, have (mysterious) *'surroundings'* from where matter can be imported from the outside over the boundaries into the (now 'non-isolated') system. That is precisely what Jesus Christ probably had done.

References

1. Wikipedia. *Christian Atheism.* Online 2021.
2. Wikipedia. *Jesus Seminar.* Online 2021.
3. Wikipedia. *The Law of the Conservation of Mass.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 28

HOW OMNIPOTENT IS GOD THE ALMIGHTY REALLY?

Only a 'Very Almighty' God?

1. **How Omnipotent is God really?** Tricky question, because the Bible says e.g., that God 'cannot lie' [Titus 1:2]. The Bible nevertheless teaches that God is omnipotent (or almighty), but in these enigmatic times of *situational ethics* and *moral relativism* (and the blurring of the lines between right & wrong, light & darkness, good & evil) the question is begged: *"How almighty (omnipotent) is God really?"* For the readers to decide his/her answer to this vexing question, try the quiz below:

How almighty (omnipotent) do you think God is really:

- Absolutely & Infinitely Almighty?
- Very Almighty?
- Almost Very Almighty?
- Just a little bit Almighty?
- Not Almighty at all!

Debriefing: The correct answer is obviously *'Absolutely & Infinitely Almighty'.* This means that the debate is never about what God can *possibly* do (for to Him all things are anyway possible) but what He will *probably* do or has probably done. For instance:

1.1 Could it be possible that God may have created the Cosmos in about 13.8 billion years?

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

ANSWER: Of course, for with God *all things* are possible. Only an idiot will deny that God could not have created the Cosmos in 13.8 billion years (or even longer); in other words, that such a challenge would have proved either 'too difficult' or 'impossible' for Him to do.

1.2 Could it be possible that God may have created the Cosmos in only six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each about 6000 years ago?

ANSWER: Of course, for with God all things are possible. Only an idiot will deny that God could not have created the Cosmos in only six ordinary days of 24 hours each about 6000 years ago, although most *Old Earth (Darwinian) creationists* I meet have, it would appear, dismissed this possibility entirely.

2. **The Gospel factor.** Now, it is completely understandable when an atheist rejects the Gospel narrative outright and dismisses the miracles of the New Testament as a Jewish myth bereft of all historical truth. But when a Christian begins to dismiss the Biblical miracles as myth the Gospel of Jesus Christ as historically unreliable that is where the problem starts.

For instance, Jesus Christ did not need 'millions of years' to multiply a few loaves and fishes for thousands to eat (the creation of new matter while science teaches that 'matter cannot be created or destroyed'); to change water into wine; to raise Lazarus from the dead and to rise from the dead Himself.

Admittedly, such kinds of miracles make (i) the atheists' *Classical Atheistic Darwinism* and (ii) the Old Earth creationists' *Darwinian Creationism* not only look bad but totally absurd; so, *"... obviously they must have been 'myths', 'forgeries', 'hoaxes' and 'lies!"* (They will say).

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

3. **'Young Earth' vs. 'Old Earth (Darwinian) Creationists'.** What are the differences between *Young and Old Earth creationists?* Basically, as follows:

3.1 *Young Earth creationists* believe that God is *absolutely and infinitely almighty (omnipotent)* and that He could have created the Cosmos in (i) *six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each about 6000 years ago* as well as (ii) over *a period of 13.8 billion year*s in terms of the 'Stellar Evolution' worldview held by the evolutionists, for the simple reason that God can do anything. Having said that, however, the *Young Earth creationists* nevertheless maintain that all the available, observable evidence in Nature, juxtaposed against the *Genesis Creation Account,* point to a creation in only *six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each only 6000 years ago.*

3.2 *Old Earth (Darwinian) creationists* on the other hand believe the same as the atheist-evolutionists believe, i.e., that the available evidence in Nature either point to a 'random, accidental Evolution-driven creation' or a 'purposeful Evolution-driven God-monitored creation' over a protracted period of e.g., *13.8 billion years.* Thus far I do not know of any Old *Earth (Darwinian) creationists* having conceded that God could have created the Cosmos in only *six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each about 6000 years ago* ... strange *'omnipotence'.*

This may be due to an oversight on my side and if the concession exists, I would like to hear about it. If not, then it would appear as if the *Old Earth (Darwinian) creationists* believe that, although God is Almighty (Omnipotent), He is only *Relatively Almighty (Omnipotent).*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

In other words, that they believe that God must have been *Almighty* enough to create a Cosmos in 13.8 billion years but not *Almighty* enough to create a Cosmos in only six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each only 6000 years ago. The reader is welcome to try and fathom, grasp, comprehend, understand or explain that kind of 'omnipotence', for I honestly cannot. It would appear as if the Old Earth (Darwinian) creationists have, on the one hand, discarded all the miracles of the Bible as mythological and not true, while, on the other hand, they have accepted the Biblical narrative only useful as some kind of handy 'ethical code' for society to live by ... in my neck of the woods we call this 'Christian Atheism'.

4. Points to Ponder.

4.1 **The Cosmos was created 'ex nihilo' from nothing.** It thus stands to reason then that God must have created this Universe from outside this Universe i.e., from a dimension or metaphysical space unknown to us subject to different 'laws' long before the *Laws of Physics* for this Universe as we know it came into existence. Furthermore, will no scientific instrument, no matter how sophisticated and technologically advanced, ever be able to detect a supernatural creation initiated by a supernatural God from the vantage point of a supernatural platform ('war-room') outside the realm of the limitations of our own *Laws of Physics* in the physical realm.

4.2 **Outside the Cosmos.** God did not create this Cosmos as if He was a tenant already living in or occupying space in this Cosmos subject to the *Laws of Physics* of this Cosmos, but from outside this Cosmos subject to other supernatural 'laws' we as humans have no inkling about. Owing to the fact that these *Laws of Physics* are His patent and creation,

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

He is absolutely entitled to manipulate and govern over them at will and as He likes. In fact, for all we know the *Laws of Physics* have been designed with the very capacity to be manipulated at will by its Creator ... as part and parcel of the *Laws of Physics.*

4.3 **In the beginning (TIME) God created the heavens (SPACE) and the earth (MATTER).** So, long before the three dimensions of *Time, Space* and *Matter* came into existence God must have existed quite fully independent of these dimensions. When King Solomon wanted to build a 'House' for God to live in, God replied to the effect that such a project would prove quite some challenge as *even the highest of His (created) heavens could not contain Him.*

4.4 **Vacillating about the miracles of the Bible.** It would appear as if the *Darwinian (Old Earth) Creationists* have a problem with the miracle elements in the Bible, so much so that a new movement (known as 'Christian Atheism' [Wikipedia]. Has emerged in terms of which its adherents have decided to accept the 'moral lessons' of the Bible but not the 'miracles' of the Bible.

Now, what kind of idiot would use the Bible for its *moral lessons* when the same Bible, according to him/her has *lied about its miracles?* I insist on believing the Bible i*n toto* (until the contrary has been proved) rather than taking the risk of believing in 'Christian Atheism' (until the contrary has been proved).

4.5 **Scientific contradictions among scientists.** *Atheists* and *Darwinian (Old Earth) Creationists* must bear in mind that todays' 'scientific-method' driven empiricists (natural scientists) have (on the one hand) e.g., no problem imagining, buying into, accepting and teaching in universities the weird, outlandish *time-warp theories* involved with

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Albert Einstein's *Relativity Theories* ... yet (on the other hand) they still have a problem with the idea of a *Young Earth creation?* How odd.

References

1. Space.com *Einstein's Theory of General Relativity*. Online 2021.
2. Space.com. *Einstein's Theory of Special Relativity.* Online 2021.
3. Wikipedia. *Creatio ex nihilo.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 29

THE GLORY OF GOD

Hiding In Plain Sight

1. **The legacy of C.S. Lewis.** C.S. Lewis once wrote that he knew that there was a God not because He could actually see Him, but because He could see everything else as lit up by the fact of His existence and presence in the Universe; just as he knew that there was a heavenly body called the 'Sun', not because he could necessarily see the Sun, but through seeing everything else as lit up and revealed by the light of the Sun. King David has written:

> *"... The heavens declare the glory of God; and the expanse proclaims His handiwork ... For with You is the fountain of life; in Your light we shall see light."*
>
> [Psalm19:1b; 36:9MKJV].

2. **Hiding In plain sight.** God is, in other words, hiding in plain sight, so that the atheist (and nobody else for that matter) has no excuse; we can all believe if we really wanted to. When the atheist chooses not to believe, he is choosing the *darkness* over the *light* for no good reason but that it is expedient for him to do so. Jesus has warned:

> *"And this is the condemnation, that the Light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than the Light, because their deeds were evil. For everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come to the Light, lest his deeds should be exposed. But he who practices truth comes to the Light so that his works may be revealed, that they exist, having been worked in God."*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[John3:19-21MKJV].

In his *Epistle to the Romans*, the Apostle Paul writes:

"*For the unseen things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being realized by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, for them to be without excuse.*"
[Romans1:20MKJV].

3. **Looking at the Moon.** In looking at the Moon, we stand amazed at its poetic beauty and incomparable lustre against the backdrop of millions of galaxies and stars draped from the ceiling of heaven like glorious chandeliers, knowing full well that the glory we are enjoying is in fact the glory of a far more glorious heavenly body, i.e., the Sun.

At night also we know that the Sun exists not because we can see the Sun, but because of its glory reflected in the Moon. We know God (shining like the 'Sun') exists because His glory was and still is reflected by the *Son* Jesus Christ (reflecting the glory of God the Father like the Moon reflects the glory of the Sun). The Bible says:

> *"For He has delivered us from the power of darkness and has translated us into the kingdom of His dear Son [JESUS]; in whom we have redemption through His blood, the remission of sins. who is the image of the invisible God, the Firstborn of all creation."*
> [Colossians1:13-15MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 30

THE GOLDEN VOICE AND SCEPTRE OF AUTHORITY

The King is Still Holding Out His Sceptre of Gospel Gold

1. **When God Speaks.** When God speaks, He speaks with a voice of undisputed authority. The Bible says that when God first called Moses to deliver the children of Israel from Egypt, He replied to Moses as to His own identity as follows:

> *"I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.'"*
>
> [Exodus3:14bKJV].

Later, in the Tent of Meeting, God spoke to Moses in another remarkable way:

> *"And when Moses was gone into the tabernacle of the congregation to speak with him, then he heard the voice of one speaking unto him from off the mercy seat that was upon the ark of testimony, from between the two cherubims: and he spake unto him."*
>
> [Numbers7:89KJV].

2. **The Voice of Authority.** The Bible says:

> *"God thundereth marvellously with his voice; great things doeth he, which we cannot comprehend."*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[Job37:5KJV].

"The voice of the LORD is upon the waters: the God of glory thundereth: the LORD is upon many waters. The voice of the LORD is powerful; the voice of the LORD is full of majesty. The voice of the LORD snaps the cedars; the LORD snaps the cedars of Lebanon."

[Psalm29:3-5].

" The voice of the LORD divideth the flames of fire. The voice of the LORD shaketh the wilderness; the LORD shaketh the wilderness of Kadesh. The voice of the LORD maketh the hinds to calve, and discovereth the forests: and in his temple doth every one speak of his glory."

[Psalm29:7-9KJV].

"Sing unto God, ye kingdoms of the earth; O sing praises unto the Lord; Selah: To him that rideth upon the heavens of heavens, which were of old; lo, he doth send out his voice, and that a mighty voice."

[Psalm68:32-33KJV].

3. **During the days of Jesus of Nazareth.** Jesus speaks to His Heavenly Father:

"Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.

Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again.

The people therefore, that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundered: others said, An angel spake to him.

The crowd standing there heard this and said that it was thunder. Others were saying, "An angel has spoken to him."

[John12:27-29].

4. **Esther and the Sceptre of Gold.** When Queen Esther was hard-pressed to speak to the king in connection with the plight of Jews, the Bible says:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"All the king's servants, and the people of the king's provinces, do know, that whosoever, whether man or woman, shall come unto the king into the inner court, who is not called, there is one law of his to put him to death, except such to whom the king shall hold out the golden sceptre, that he may live: but I have not been called to come in unto the king these thirty days."

[Esther4:11KJV].

The plot thickens:

"Now it came to pass on the third day, that Esther put on her royal apparel, and stood in the inner court of the king's house, over against the king's house: and the king sat upon his royal throne in the royal house, over against the gate of the house.

"And it was so, when the king saw Esther the queen standing in the court, that she obtained favour in his sight: and the king held out to Esther the golden sceptre that was in his hand. So Esther drew near, and touched the top of the sceptre.

"Then said the king unto her, What wilt thou, queen Esther? and what is thy request? it shall be even given thee to the half of the kingdom."

[Esther5:1-3KJV].

5. '**Kings' just love to show mercy.** Legend has it that when El Cid, the legendary Spanish knight and hero of Valentia was confronted with a decision where the death penalty for the accused (his enemy) was well-deserved, he mercifully granted the man a reprieve with these famous words: *"Any fool can kill; only kings can show mercy!"*

Today the God and Creator of Heaven and Earth still comes to us, though deserving of the death penalty, with the words:

"And he said, I will make all my goodness pass before thee, and I will proclaim the name of the LORD before thee; and will be

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will shew mercy on whom I will shew mercy."

[Exodus33:19KJV].

The King is extending His *Golden Sceptre of Mercy* in the shape of the Gospel of Jesus Christ today for us to touch. The Bible says:

"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."

[Romans6:23KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 31

INFINITY

If We Could Fully Comprehend the Width, Depth & Height of the Mind and Persona of God, He would Not Be God

1. **Can Scientists explain Infinity?** Well-meaning scientists are trying their level best to understand and explain Infinity, but to no avail. Some notes:

1.1 **Only an Infinite Mind will ever grasp and understand Infinity.** Finite minds such as ours (and those of scientists) will never grasp Infinity here on earth. The best we can do is to realise that we cannot grasp *Infinity* (and openly say so).

1.2 **The *Creator* (the 'I AM!' of Moses & Mt. Sinai) is the only Persona with the ability and scientific stature (i.e., an Infinite Mind) to grasp, know and fully understand Infinity.** There is no limit to His Understanding:

"Great is our Lord, and of great power: his understanding is INFINITE."

[Psalm147:5KJV].

1.3 **God created the Cosmos; there is no other explanation for the origins of the world.**

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"He hath made the earth by his power, he [GOD] hath established the world by his wisdom, and hath stretched out the heavens by his discretion."

[Jeremiah10:12KJV].

"All things were made by him [JESUS CHRIST] and without him was not any thing made that was made."

[John1:3KJV].

"For of him, and through him, and to him, are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen."

[Romans11:36KJV].

1.4 Jesus Christ was the *Projects Engineer* tasked with the responsibility to create the Universe.

"God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds."

[Hebrews1:1-2KJV].

1.5 God (Jesus Christ) appointed the number of stars and has given them all names.

"He telleth the number of the stars; he calleth them all by their names."

[Psalm147:4KJV].

1.6 As the heavens are higher than the earth, so are God's ways higher than our ways, and His thoughts than our thoughts.

"For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts."

[Isaiah55:8-9KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

1.7 **Heaven is God's Throne and Earth His footstool.** If the Cosmos is His Throne, imagine the splendour of His Throne-room, Palace, Palace-gardens and His 'Divine Universe' ('Paradise'):

"Thus saith the LORD, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build unto me? And where is the place of my rest?"

[Isaiah66:1KJV].

1.8 **God can do anything, and nothing would be impossible for Him to do; with God all things are possible.**

"I know that thou canst do every thing, and that no thought can be withholden from thee."

[Job42:2KJV].

"But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible."

[Matthew19:26KJV].

"And Jesus looking upon them saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible ... And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee; take away this cup from me: nevertheless not what I will, but what thou wilt."

[Mark10:27; 14:36KJV].

"And he said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with God."

[Luke-18:27KJV].

2. **Anything possible for God.** God can do far above that which we as humans, in our wildest of imaginations, could ever endeavour to pray or think. In other words, were we for instance to imagine the most outrageous of miracles or wonders to happen, God would be able to do it (and far more!) provided it would be in His ideal *Divine Will* for Him to do.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

In other words, if I can think (imagine) a fully functioning Universe created in six ordinary weekdays of 24 hours each about 6000 years ago and God could not do that (i.e., rise to that challenge) then He could not do anything and everything would not be possible for Him to do, a *philosophical contradiction in Christian Theology and a world in which God would not be considered omnipotent (almighty).*

> *"Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us."*
>
> [Ephesians3:20KJV].

3. **Comprehending Infinity.** As I alluded before, there is no way the finite mind will ever grasp, access and understand what only the Infinite Mind can ever do; the best we can do is to acknowledge and concede that we cannot know. In fact, had we been capable of wrapping out minds around the 'architecture' of the Persona and Mind of God, He would no longer be God and we would be 'god' instead.

n order, however, not to walk away with empty hands, I have devised a way to *not grasping Infinity* but just to *grasping the fact of the Infinity of God* as a reminder, i.e., by assuming in faith that God's (undetermined) I.Q. (Intelligence Quotient) must (metaphorically speaking) be an (humanly speaking undetermined) INFINITY to the power of INFINITY:

$$\text{INFINITY}^{\text{infinity}}$$

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 32

THE CASE FOR THE TRINITY

Father, Son & Holy Spirit

1. **Introduction.** Thorough theological theses on the topic probably abound, but for me the following observations will suffice:

1.1 **The Heavenly Father.** Jesus Christ often referred to His 'Heavenly Father' on numerous occasions.

"But He answered and said, Every plant which My heavenly Father has not planted shall be rooted up ... So likewise shall My heavenly Father do also to you, unless each one of you from your hearts forgive his brother their trespasses."

[Matthew 15:13; 18:35MKJV].

1.2 **The Son.** On at least two occasions did God the Father affirm Jesus as His 'Son' with whom He was 'well-pleased'.

"And lo, a voice from Heaven, saying, This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased ... While he yet spoke, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them. And behold a voice out of the cloud which said, This is My beloved Son in whom I am well pleased, hear Him."

[Matthew 3:17; 17:5MKJV].

So, was Jesus Christ a disingenuous, gifted ventriloquist who was addressing Himself or did the Father really speak from Heaven that day?

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

1.3 **Transfinite mathematics.** Anyone familiar with transfinite mathematics knows that *INFINITY minus ONE remains INFINITY* ($\infty - 1 = \infty$).

Infinity cannot be diminished by taking away from it, whether it is subtracting or removing *ONE* or a *QUADRILLION*. The fact of Jesus Christ's existence as the *Son of God* (the proverbial 'Chip off the Old Block') does not detract from the integrity of God's power of existence. Even mankind was created with God infusing us as individuals with 'chunks' ('portions' or 'samples') of His Spirit without any loss to Himself at all. True (omnipotent) INFINITY can share its *infiniteness* at will and with whom He likes *ad infinitum* and indefinitely.

" ... then the dust shall return to the earth as it was, and the spirit shall return to God who gave it.

[Ecclesiastes12:7MKJV].

1.4 **The Son subservient to the Father.** Jesus always stressed the fact that He (the Son) was *subservient to His Father and* could only do and say what His Father had prescribed Him to do or say.

"Then Jesus answered and said to them, Truly, truly, I say to you, The Son can do nothing of Himself but what He sees the Father do. For whatever things He does, these also the Son does likewise ... I can do nothing of My own self. As I hear, I judge, and My judgment is just, because I do not seek My own will, but the will of the Father who has sent Me ... Then Jesus said to them, When you have lifted up the Son of Man, then you shall know that I AM, and that I do nothing of Myself, but as My Father has taught Me, I speak these things."

[John 5:19,30; 8:28MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

1.5 **The date of the Second Coming.** Jesus has taught that only the Father knew (or knows) the exact time of the *Second Coming* of Jesus Christ; Jesus did not (or perhaps still does not) know the time.

"But of that day and hour no one knows, no, not the angels of Heaven, but only My Father."

[Matthew 24:36MKJV].

1.6 **A loving society of Persons.** The fact that God is 'Love' demands a 'society of persons' to exhibit such love; a single persona with no one to love (or respond to the love) does not make philosophical sense.

"The one who does not love has not known God. For God is love. In this the love of God was revealed in us, because God sent His only begotten Son into the world that we might live through Him. In this is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son to be the propitiation concerning our sins. Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.

"No one has seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwells in us, and His love is perfected in us. By this we know that we dwell in Him, and He in us, because He has given us of His Spirit. And we have seen and testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Savior of the world.

"Whoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwells in him and he in God. And we have known and believed the love that God has in us. God is love, and he who abides in love abides in God, and God in him."

[1John4:8-16MKJV].

1.7 **No 'pantheistic union' suggested.** The assumed unity between the *Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit* affectionately known as the 'Trinity' does not suggest a *'pantheistic fusion of three personalities into one'* as some would want to have it or as some people's understanding of it. When Jesus Christ thus was praying in his landmark

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

prayer in *John Chptr17* neither was He suggesting a 'pantheistic fusion' of personalities between the persons of the disciples. He prayed:

"... that they [DISCIPLES] all may be one, as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You, that they [DISCIPLES] also may be one in Us, so that the world may believe that You have sent Me."
[John 17:21MKJV].

If those who oppose the personality differentiation between the Father, Son and Holy Spirit with the purpose of fusing the three *Divine Personas* 'pantheistically' into ONE single personality, then they will have to be consistent and do the same with the disciples too. Bible history, however, clearly shows that it was not the case, and that, although the disciples had served as ONE, they have consistently remained separate personas with their separate temperaments and individual personalities wholly intact, so much so that the Apostle Paul even has had to reprimand the Apostle Peter for his selective application of the Word of God i.r.o. the treatment of Jews vs. non-Jews.

1.8 **Jesus Christ, not God the Father, the 'Chief Justice' presiding at the Great White Throne Judgment.** Although our Heavenly Father is the *Ultimate Authority* in the Universe (visible & invisible) He will not be judging anyone at the *Great White Throne Judgment* in Heaven; the right to *Judgment* has been conferred on the Son of God, Jesus Christ who will preside as the *Chief Justice* at the *Great White Throne Judgment:*

"And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, All authority is given to Me in Heaven and in earth ... For as the Father raises the dead and makes alive, even so the Son of Man makes alive whomever He wills. For the Father judges no man, but has

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

committed all judgment to the Son ... so that all should honor the Son, even as they honor the Father ..."

[Matthew 28:18; John5:21-23aMKJV].

1.9 **Delivering the Kingdom back to the Father.** There will come a 'time' when Jesus Christ will deliver the Kingdom to God the Father (as explained in *Matthew 28:18 and John5:21-23a)* after He had put all His enemies under His feet clearly illustrating the differentiation between the Father and the Son. The Bible says:

"For since death is through man, the resurrection of the dead also is through a Man. For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ all will be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ the first-fruit, and afterward they who are Christ's at His coming; then is the end, when He delivers the kingdom to God, even the Father; when He makes to cease all rule and all authority and power. For it is right for Him to reign until He has put all the enemies under His feet."

[1Corinthians15:21-25MKJV].

It thus stands to reason that His Father has the higher authority than the authority exercised by the Son.

1.10 **The Son at the 'Right Hand' of the Father.** The Bible teaches that Jesus Christ (the Son of God) sits (or stands) at the *right hand* of the Father, clearly distinguishing the separation of the positions and personas of Father and Son.

"But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God."

[Acts7:55-56KJV].

"God, who at many times and in many ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, has in these last days spoken to us by His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, by whom

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

also He made the worlds, who being the shining splendor of His glory, and the express image of His essence, and upholding all things by the word of His power, through Himself cleansing of our sins, He sat down on the right of the Majesty on high, being made so much better than the angels, as He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. For to which of the angels did He say at any time, "You are My Son, this day I have begotten You?" And again, "I will be to Him a Father, and He shall be to Me a Son?"

[Hebrews1:1-5MKJV].

"To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me [JESUS] in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne."

[Revelation3:21KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 33

THE DIVINITY OF JESUS CHRIST

When God Became a Man

1. **The Doctrine of Divinity.** The doctrine of the divinity of Jesus Christ is central to Christianity; any brand of Christianity (e.g., the postmodernist 'Jesus Seminar', 'Christian Atheism' & 'Nuwe Hervormers' movements) that denies the divinity of Christ as the Son of God is bogus 'Christianity'. The Bible is very clear about this:

> *"Who is a liar but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? He who denies the Father and the Son is antichrist. Everyone who denies the Son neither has the Father. The one confessing the Son also has the Father. Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God? He who believes on the Son of God has the witness in himself. He who does not believe God has made Him a liar, because he does not believe the record that God gave of His Son. And this is the record, that God has given to us everlasting life, and this life is in His Son. He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life.*
>
> [1John2:22,23;5:5,10-12MKJV].

2. **The Testimony of the Father.** The testimony of God the Father Himself affirmed the divine status of Jesus Christ:

> *"And lo, a voice from Heaven, saying, This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.*
>
> [Matthew 3:17MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

3. **The Testimony of Jesus of Nazareth.** The clarion call of the divinity of Christ resounds loud and clear also from the language Jesus Christ used during His ministry on Earth, e.g.:

"But immediately Jesus spoke to them, saying, Be of good cheer, I AM! Do not fear."

[Matthew14:27MKJV].

"And they all said, Are you then the Son of God? And He said to them, You say it, because I AM!"

[Luke22:70MKJV].

"I am the Bread of life."

"And He said to them, You are from beneath; I am from above. You are of this world; I am not of this world."

"Jesus said to him, I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life; no one comes to the Father but by Me."

"I am the True Vine, and My Father is the Vinedresser."

"Jesus said to them, Truly, truly, I say to you, Before Abraham came into being, I AM!"

"Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also."

"For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son ... And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man."

[John6:48; 8:23; 14:6; 15:1; 8:58; John5:22,27; 14:1-3KJV].

"These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was."

[John17:1-5KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne."

"And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie. I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star. And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely."

"And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely."

[Revelation3:21; 21:6; 22:12-17KJV].

4. **The testimony of Matthew.**

"Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us."

[Matthew1:23KJV].

5. **The testimony of the first martyr, the Apostle Stephen.** On the day of his execution by the angry mob, Stephen has solemnly affirmed the divinity of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:

"But he, being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God, And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God. Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

him with one accord, And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whose name was Saul. And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit."

[Acts7:55-59KJV].

6. **The testimony of the Apostle Paul.** After his life-changing encounter with the risen Christ, the Apostle Paul call was able to declare:

"But why dost thou judge thy brother? Or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? For we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ ... For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad ...

"I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords;

"Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen."

[Romans14:10; 2Corinthians5:10; 1Timothy6:13-16KJV].

7. **The testimony of the Apostle John*.** In Heaven Jesus Christ is worshipped. The Apostle John* writes on the Isle of Patmos:

"And when he had taken the book, the four beasts and four and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST] having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints ... Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST] that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

blessing. And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST] for ever and ever."

[Revelation5:8, 12-13].

"And I saw when the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST] opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come and see ... And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST] ... After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST], clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST]."

[Revelation6:1;16; 7:9-10KJV].

"And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST] are the temple of it ... And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST] is the light thereof ... And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's [JESUS CHRIST'S] book of life ... And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST] ... And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb [JESUS CHRIST] shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him."

[Revelation21:22-23; 27; 22:1,3KJV].

*The 'Beloved Disciple' John: Not to be confused with John the Baptist.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 34

THE GENEALOGY OF JESUS CHRIST TRACED BACK TO ADAM

Cultural Historical Affirmation of the Genesis Creation Account

"And Jesus Himself was beginning to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, the son of Heli,

"the son of Matthat, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Janna, the son of Joseph,

"the son of Mattathias, the son of Amos, the son of Nahum, the son of Esli, the son of Naggai,

"the son of Maath, the son of Mattathias, the son of Semei, the son of Joseph, the son of Juda,

"the son of Joanna, the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, the son of Neri,

"the son of Melchi, the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elmodam, the son of Er,

"the son of Joses, the son of Eliezer, the son of Jorum, the son of Matthat, the son of Levi,

"the son of Simeon, the son of Juda, the son of Joseph, the son of Jonan, the son of Eliakim,

"the son of Melea, the son of Menan, the son of Mattatha, the son of Nathan, the son of David,

"the son of Jesse, the son of Obed, the son of Boaz, the son of Salma, the son of Nahshon,

"the son of Amminadab, the son of Ram, the son of Hezron, the son of Pharez, the son of Judah,

"the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac, the son of Abraham, the son of Terah, the son of Nahor,

"the son of Serug, the son of Reu, the son of Peleg, the son of Eber, the son of Shelah,

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"the son of Cainan, the son of Arphaxad, the son of Shem, the son of Noah, the son of Lamech,

"the son of Methuselah, the son of Enoch, the son of Jared, the son of Mahalaleel, the son of Cainan,

"the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God."

[Luke3:23-38MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 35

ALPHA & OMEGA

Jesus Christ the Beginning and the End; the First and the Last

1. **Origin.** The term 'Alpha & Omega' ('Beginning & End') refers to the first and last letters of the *Greek alphabet.*

> *"In rabbinic literature, the word emet ('truth'), composed of the first and last letters of the Hebrew alphabet, is 'the seal of God', and in Judaic tradition it carries somewhat the same connotation as Alpha and Omega."*
>
> [Encyclopaedia Britannica, Online 2021].

2. **Old Testament References.** The O.T. mentions at least twice that:

> *"No man can know the work that God does from beginning to end"*
>
> [Ecclesiastes3:11MKJV].
>
> *"God declares the end from the beginning and from ancient times the things that are not yet done."*
>
> [Isaiah46:10MKJV].

3. **New Testament References.** Jesus Christ, in a vision to the beloved disciple John on the Isle of Patmos, refers at least four times to Himself as the *'Alpha and Omega'* ('Beginning and End')(Revelation1:8,11;21:6;22:13].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

4. **Personal Application.** I herewith would like to share these attributes of God (thus those of Jesus Christ, the Son of God the Father) and, as mentioned earlier, Creator of *Time, Space and Matter,* with the reader as follows:

4.1 TIME: In the beginning *(Time)* God created the heaven *(Space)* and the earth *(Matter).* [Genesis1:1]. As the *Alpha & Omega* God is *Master over Time* who declares the *End from the Beginning* of which no man can know the work that God does from *Beginning to End.* Jesus Christ has said:

"Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away."

[Luke21:33KJV].

4.2 MATTER: Jesus Christ did not have to wait for the (extra) loaves and fishes to 'evolve' over 'millions of years'; He multiplied (in minutes) a few loaves and fishes in a basket to enough for thousands to eat and still leave twelve baskets in leftovers ... probably the largest 'doggie bag' to take home in history. He was/is the *Master over Matter* by commanding the storm and the wind to be quiet.

4.3 SPACE: Suffice to say:

"How big is God, how big and wide His vast domain; to try and tell, these lips can only start! He's big enough to rule His mighty Universe, yet small enough to dwell within the heart!"

[Stuart Hamblen, 1908-1989].

References

1. Britannica.com. *Alpha & Omega.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2. Hamblen, Stuart. *It Is No Secret What Can Do.* Gospel Hall of Fame.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 36

BEAUTY FOR ASHES

Beauty, the Oil of Joy & the Garment of Praise

1. **Beauty for Ashes.** One day long ago in *Old Jerusalem* a young man of about the age of 30 stood up and read, echoing the words from the *Prophet Isaiah* in *Isaiah-61:1-3:*

> *"The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised ... "*
>
> [Luke4:18KJV].

So, for the next two millenniums Jesus of Nazareth (the Christ) has been blessing those who dared to come to Him in childlike faith with exactly what the prophet of old had prophesied:

BEAUTY for ashes, the *OIL of JOY for mourning* and the *GARMENT of PRAISE for a spirit of heaviness!*

2. **The Ashes of Atheism.** Atheists complain for hours on end that the Cosmos offers no *'design, meaning and purpose'* and instead, only *'pitiless indifference' (Dawkins*). But, however, no wonder ... they have rejected the *King of Glory* and holy Heavenly dispenser of *Beauty, the Oil of Joy and Garment of Praise ...* what else did they expect? When the atheist rejects Jesus Christ as Saviour & Lord, he is for all intents and purposes rejecting:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

(i) Design ('Beauty').
(ii) Meaning ('the Oil of Joy').
(iii) Purpose ('The Garment of Praise').

We see *'Beauty'* in the way the majestic and unfathomable Universe was Designed, *'Meaning'* since without the prospect of *Heavenly Joy* (in this life and the next) life will never have meaning and *'Purpose'* since the prime reason for man's existence is for the donning of the *Garment of Praise* in worship of the Creator. Without these priceless gifts from God, life in the Cosmos will inevitably prove forever *without design, meaning and purpose, i.e.,* Dawkins' bizarre and depressing atheism-driven world of *'pitiless indifference'.*

3. **The Promise of Jesus Christ.**

> *"The thief [SATAN] cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I [JESUS] am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly. I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep."*
>
> [John10:10-11KJV].

4. **Messianic Prophesy from the Old Testament anticipating the First Coming of Jesus Christ.**

> *"... To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified."*
>
> [Isaiah61:3KJV].

5. **Fulfilment & Vindication of Isaiah's Prophesy.** Centuries later, Jesus of Nazareth stood up in the synagogue:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the brokenhearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, To preach the acceptable year of the Lord. And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears."

[Luke4:17-21KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 3

BECAUSE JESUS CHRIST SAID SO

He said So and That Settles It

1. **How do we know that Adam & Eve were the first two humans ever?** Because Jesus said so!

> *" ... Have you not read that He who made them at the beginning 'made them male and female' "*
>
> [Matthew19:4b].
>
> *"But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female."*
>
> [Mark10:6MKJV].

2. **How do we know that the 'Noah's Flood' really happened?** Because Jesus said so!

> *"And as it was in the days of Noah, so it also shall be in the days of the Son of Man. They ate, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark; and the flood came and destroyed them all."*
>
> [Luke17:26-27MKJV].

3. **How do we know that Jesus was not sent to condemn the world, but to save the world?** Because Jesus said so!

> *"For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world might be saved through Him."*
>
> [John3:17MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

4. **How do we know that God so loved the world that we can have Everlasting Life through Faith in Christ?** Because Jesus said so!

> *"For God so loved the world that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life."*
>
> [John3:16MKJV].

5. **How do we know that we must be Born Again?** Because Jesus said so!

> *"Do not marvel that I said to you, You must be born again."*
>
> [John3:7MKJV].

6. **How do we know that we may become children of God through accepting Jesus Christ as Saviour?** Because Jesus said so!

> *"But as many as received Him, He gave to them authority to become the children of God, to those who believe on His name, who were born, not of bloods, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but were born of God."*
>
> [John1:12-13MKJV].

7. **How do we know that, unless we want to die in our sins, we have to repent and believe the Gospel?** Because Jesus said so!

> *The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God draws near. Repent, and believe the gospel ... I tell you, No. But unless you repent, you will all likewise perish."*
>
> [Mark1:15b; Luke13:3MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

8. **How do we know that Jesus has risen from the grave?** Because Jesus said so!

> *"And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying to me, Do not fear, I am the First and the Last, and the Living One, and I became dead, and behold, I am alive for ever and ever, Amen. And I have the keys of hell and of death."*
>
> [Revelation1:17-18KJV].

9. **How do we know that Jesus is coming again?** Because Jesus said so!

> *"In My Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself, so that where I am, you may be also."*
>
> [John14:2-3MKJV].

> (Also: *"Behold, He comes with the clouds, and every eye will see Him ..."*
>
> [Revelation1:7MKJV]).

10. **How do we know that Jesus Christ is the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End, the First and the Last?** Because Jesus said so!

> *"And behold, I am coming quickly, and My reward is with Me, to give to each according as his work is. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the Ending, the First and the Last."*
>
> [Revelation22:12-13MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 38

THE I AM'S OF JESUS CHRIST

Jesus Christ the Great 'I Am'!

1. **Moses meets the 'I AM'.** When Moses (the 'Lawgiver') on Mt. Sinai asked the mysterious Being speaking to him from the burning bush who He was, the answer he got was a blunt, *"I AM",* or a step further, *"I AM that I AM!"*

2. **The Apostle John's Christology.** John, the 'beloved apostle', elaborates on a wonderful 'Christology' in the narrative of the Gospel of John, for instance, Jesus Christ has said:

> *"I AM the Bread of life ... For the bread of God is He who comes down from Heaven and gives life to the world."*
> [John6:48,33MKJV].
> *"As long as I AM in the world, I am the Light of the world ... I have come as a Light into the world, so that whoever believes on Me should not remain in darkness."*
> [John9:5; 12:46MKJV].
> *"Then Jesus said to them again, Truly, truly, I say to you, I AM the door of the sheep. I am the door. If anyone enters in by Me, he shall be saved and shall go in and out and find pasture."*
> [John10:7,9MKJV].
> *"I AM the Good Shepherd. The Good Shepherd lays down His life for the sheep ... I am the Good Shepherd, and I know those that are Mine, and I am known by those who are Mine."*
> [John10:11,14MKJV].
> *'Jesus said to her, 'I AM the Resurrection and the Life! He who believes in Me, though he die, yet he shall live'."*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[John11:25MKJV].

"Jesus said to him, 'I AM the Way, the Truth, and the Life; no one comes to the Father but by Me'."

[John14:6MKJV].

"I AM the True Vine, and My Father is the Vinedresser ... Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself unless it remains in the vine, so neither can you unless you abide in Me."

[John15:1,4MKJV].

'I AM the Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the Ending, says the Lord, who is and who was and who is to come, the Almighty."

[Revelation1:8MKJV].

"... saying, I AM the Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last. Also, What you see, write in a book and send it to the seven churches which are in Asia: to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamos, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea."

[Revelation1:11MKJV].

"And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying to me, Do not fear, I AM the First and the Last, and the Living One, and I became dead, and behold, I am alive for ever and ever, Amen. And I have the keys of hell and of death."

[Revelation1:17-18MKJV].

"And He said to me, It is done. I AM the Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End. To him who thirsts I will give of the fountain of the Water of Life freely."

[Revelation21:6MKJV].

"And behold, I am coming quickly, and My reward is with Me, to give to each according as his work is. I AM the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the Ending, the First and the Last."

[Revelation22:12-13MKJV].

"I, Jesus, have sent My angel to testify these things to you over the churches. I AM the Root and the Offspring of David, the bright and Morning Star."

[Revelation22:16MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

3. **The Divine Paradox.** A remarkable paradox that illustrates the true cosmic mystery of the august Trinity is that, notwithstanding the fact that Jesus had stated that His Father was 'greater than He', He nevertheless not for a moment considered it fraudulent or blasphemous to put Himself on par with God:

> *"Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me [JESUS]. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also."*
>
> [John14:1-3KJV].
>
> *"For let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God; but made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men."*
>
> [Philippians2:5-7KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 39

BUILD YOUR HOUSE ON THE ROCK OF AGES

Rock of Ages, cleft for me; let me hide myself in Thee!

1. **The Unverifiability of Classical (Atheistic) Darwinism.** In order to affirm *Classical (Atheistic) Darwinism* and verify its wild claims (theories, opinions) about the history and origins of the Cosmos and also the evolutionists' claims about the origins and age of the earth, skeptics will have to travel 'billions of years' into the past to verify 'cosmic' or 'stellar evolution'.

Likewise, to affirm the evolutionists' claims about the 'anthropological & biological' origins and age of mankind, skeptics will have to travel 'millions of years' into the past to verify the veracity of theories founded on palaeontological excavations and fossils. How this unverifiability can be accepted as *'irrefutable observable & measurable empirical evidence founded on the scientific method'* boggles the mind.

2. **The Unverifiability of Darwinian Creationism (Creative Theistic Evolution).** This hybrid worldview of a cross between the *Genesis Creation Account Classical (Atheistic) Darwinism proves* to be even more unverifiable for the same reasons as mentioned before ... *and more. Unverifiable* theories cannot be *falsified* and are thus considered plain conjecture, nothing more and nothing less. As mentioned before:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2.1 Should *Classical (Atheistic) Darwinism* be found to have been false (invalid) then *Darwinian Creationism (Creative Evolution)* will fall off the bus because *Darwinian Creationism (Creative Evolution)* needs 'Evolution' in the equation to survive as a viable theory.

2.2 Should *Classical (Atheistic) Darwinism* be found to have been true (valid) then *Darwinian Creationism* will again fall off the bus because *Darwinian Creationism (Creative Evolution)* needs a 'Creator' in its equation to survive as a viable theory.

3. **The Evolution 'Catch-22'.** Ideas and theories about 'Evolution' have proliferated but we can safely deduce that they finally have bifurcated into the two dominant worldviews of *Classical Atheistic Darwinism* and *Darwinian Creationism (Creative Theistic Evolutionism).* So, although these two worldviews are trying to perambulate over the convoluted landscape of troubled and perplexed academia as bedpartners in search of the same 'missing link', they are mortal enemies, since:

3.1 these two worldviews are mutually exclusive and cannot both be right (true/valid) at the same time.

3.2 in terms of the *'no honour among thieves'* principle *Darwinian Creationism* falls off the bus every time anyway whether *Classic (Atheistic) Darwinism* would be found to have been either valid (true) or invalid (false). Jesus Christ has said*:*

"Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: And the rain descended, and the floods

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock."

[Matthew7:24-25KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 40

THE LIFE AND MISSION OF JESUS OF NAZARETH, 'THE CHRIST'

How Jesus of Nazareth Christ Changed the History of the World

1. **Proposition #1: The Ultimate Authority.** God the Father is greater than Jesus Christ (God the Son).

> *"You have heard how I said to you, I go away and I am coming to you again. If you loved Me, you would rejoice because I said, I go to the Father, for My Father is greater than I."*
>
> [John14:28MKJV].
>
> *"For Jesus, in the days of His flesh, when had offered up prayers and supplications with strong cryings and tears to Him who was able to save Him from death, and was heard in that He feared, though being a Son, yet He learned obedience by the things which He suffered. And being perfected, He became the Author of eternal salvation to all those who obey Him, being called by God a high priest after the order of Melchizedek."*
>
> [Hebrews5:7-10MKJV].

P.S. For Jesus having had to learn obedience to the Father, it thus stands to reason that He is subservient to the Father and that the Father is greater than the Son.

2. **Proposition #2: The Divine Power of Jesus Christ.** All power in heaven and earth has been conferred by God the Father on Jesus Christ, God the Son.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, All authority is given to Me in Heaven and in earth. Therefore go and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things, whatever I commanded you. And, behold, I am with you all the days until the end of the world. Amen."

[Matthew28:18MKJV].

"But as many as received Him, He gave to them authority to become the children of God, to those who believe on His name, who were born, not of bloods, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but were born of God. And the Word became flesh, and tabernacled among us. And we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and of truth."

[John1:12-14MKJV].

3. **Proposition #3: The Divinity of Jesus Christ.** Christ is the Second Person of the Godhead (Trinity) and One with God the Father.

"Jesus said to them, Truly, truly, I say to you, Before Abraham came into being, I AM! ... And now Father, glorify Me with Yourself with the glory which I had with You before the world was

... that they all may be one, as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You, that they also may be one in Us, so that the world may believe that You have sent Me

...Jesus said to her, Do not touch Me, for I have not yet ascended to My Father. But go to My brothers and say to them, I ascend to My Father and Your Father, and to My God and your God

... I am the Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the Ending, says the Lord, who is and who was and who is to come, the Almighty.

" ... saying, I am the Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last. Also, What you see, write in a book and send it to the seven churches which are in Asia: to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamos, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying to me, Do not fear, I am the First and the Last,

"... and the Living One, and I became dead, and behold, I am alive for ever and ever, Amen. And I have the keys of hell and of death.

"Behold, I am throwing her into a bed, and those who commit adultery with her into great affliction, unless they repent of their deeds.

"And I will kill her children with death. And all the churches will know that I am He who searches the reins and hearts, and I will give to every one of you according to your works.

"Because you say, I am rich and increased with goods and have need of nothing, and do not know that you are wretched and miserable and poor and blind and naked,

"Behold, I am coming as a thief. Blessed is the one who watches and keeps his garments, lest he walk naked and they see his shame.

"As much as she has glorified herself and has lived in luxury, so much torment and sorrow give her. For she says in her heart, I sit as a queen, and I am not a widow; and I do not see mourning at all.

"And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said to me, See, do not do it! I am your fellow servant, and of your brothers who have the testimony of Jesus. Worship God, for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

"And He said to me, It is done. I am the Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End. To him who thirsts I will give of the fountain of the Water of Life freely.

"Then he said to me, Behold! See, do not do it! For I am your fellow-servant, and of your brothers the prophets, and of those who keep the Words of this Book. Do worship to God.

"And behold, I am coming quickly, and My reward is with Me, to give to each according as his work is.

"I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the Ending, the First and the Last.

"I, Jesus, have sent My angel to testify these things to you over the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, the bright and Morning Star.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"He who testifies these things says, Yes, I am coming quickly, Amen. Yes, come, Lord Jesus."

[John8:58; 17:5,21; 20:17; Revelation1:8,11,17,18; 2:22,23; 3:17; 16:15; 18:7;19:10; 21:6; 22:9,12,13,16,20MKJV].

4. **Proposition #4: The Resurrected 'BIOS' & 'ZOE' Life of Jesus Christ.** Jesus Christ was/is fully human ('BIOS' life) as well as fully divine ('ZOE' life).

"For as the Father has life in Himself, so He has given to the Son to have life within Himself, and has given Him authority to execute judgment also, because He is the Son of Man."

[John5:26-27MKJV].

"But as many as received Him, He gave to them authority to become the children of God, to those who believe on His name, who were born, not of bloods, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but were born of God. And the Word became flesh, and tabernacled among us. And we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and of truth."

[John1:12-14MKJV].

"And I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And having turned, I saw seven golden lampstands. And in the midst of the seven lampstands I saw One like the Son of man [JESUS CHRIST], clothed with a garment down to the feet, and tied around the breast with a golden band. His head and hair were white like wool, as white as snow. And His eyes were like a flame of fire.

"And His feet were like burnished brass having been fired in a furnace. And His voice was like the sound of many waters. And He had seven stars in His right hand, and out of His mouth went a sharp two-edged sword. And His face was like the sun shining in its strength.

"And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying to me, Do not fear, I am the First and the Last, and the Living One, and I became dead, and behold, I am alive for ever and ever, Amen. And I have the keys of hell and of death."

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[Revelation1:12-18MKJV].

5. **Proposition #5: Salvation through Jesus Christ.** Jesus Christ has the power to give Eternal Life.

"My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me. And I give to them eternal life, and they shall never ever perish, and not anyone shall pluck them out of My hand."

[John10:27-28MKJV].

"But as many as received Him, He gave to them authority to become the children of God, to those who believe on His name, who were born, not of bloods, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but were born of God. And the Word became flesh, and tabernacled among us. And we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and of truth."

[John1:12-14MKJV].

"For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."

[Romans6:23MKJV].

6. **Proposition 6: The Power of the Blood/Sacrifice of Jesus Christ.**

"But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin ... knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, silver or gold, from your vain manner of life handed down from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot."

[1John1:7; 1Peter1:18-19MKJV].

7. Proposition #7: Jesus Christ the Good Shepherd. Jesus Christ is the Good Shepherd who has given His life for His sheep (faithful believers).

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"I am the Good Shepherd. The Good Shepherd lays down His life for the sheep."

[John10:11MKJV].

8. **Proposition #8: Jesus Christ the Rock & Foundation.** Jesus Christ *('Petra' = 'a massive rock')* and not the Apostle Peter *('Petros' = 'a piece of rock')* is the Rock & Foundation upon which the Church ('Ecclesia') is founded.

"And I also say to you that you are Peter ['Petros': 'a piece of rock'], and on this rock ['Petra': 'a massive rock' > JESUS] I will build My church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it ... as it is written, "'Behold, I lay in Zion a Stumbling-stone and a Rock-of-offense, and everyone believing on Him shall not be put to shame' ... For any other foundation can no one lay than the one being laid, who is Jesus Christ ... and all drank the same spiritual drink; for they drank of the spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ."

[Matthew16:18; Romans9:33; 1Corinthians3:11; 10:4MKJV].

Even the Apostle Peter *('Petros: The small pebble')* himself has conceded:

"Therefore also it is contained in the Scripture: 'Behold, I lay in Zion a chief corner Stone, elect, precious, and he who believes on Him shall never be ashamed. Therefore to you who believe is the honor. But to those who are disobedient, He is the Stone which the builders rejected; this One came to be the Head of the corner, and a Stone-of-stumbling and a Rock-of-offense to those disobeying, who stumble at the Word, to which they also were appointed.' "

[1Peter2:6-8MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

9. **Proposition #9: The Creation and Maintenance of the World.** Jesus Christ was/is God the Father's de facto 'Projects Engineer' for the creation and maintenance of the world.

> *"God, who at many times and in many ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, has in these last days spoken to us by His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the worlds, who being the shining splendor of His glory, and the express image of His essence, and upholding all things by the word of His power, through Himself cleansing of our sins, He sat down on the right of the Majesty on high, being made so much better than the angels, as He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they."*
>
> [Hebrews1:1-4MKJV].

10. **Proposition #10: The exalted Name of Jesus Christ.** Jesus Christ has obtained a more excellent name even above angels.

> *" ... being made so much better than the angels, as He [JESUS] has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they."*
>
> [Hebrews1:4MKJV].

11. **Proposition #11. A New Name.** There will come a time in Heaven when Jesus Christ receives a 'New Name'.

> *"Him who overcomes I will make him a pillar in the temple of My God, and he will go out no more. And I will write upon him the name of My God, and the name of the city of My God, the New Jerusalem, which comes down out of Heaven from My God, and My new name."*
>
> [Revelation3:12MKJV].

12. **Proposition #12: The Obedience & Suffering of Jesus Christ.** Jesus Christ learned obedience (to the Father) through

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

His suffering. It thus also stands to reason that His Father is greater than He.

" ... though being a Son, yet He learned obedience by the things which He suffered."

[Hebrews5:8MKJV].

13. **Proposition #13: Jesus Christ: The only Mediator after the Order of Melchizedek.** Jesus Christ is the only Mediator between God and man.

"And there is salvation in no other One; for there is no other name under Heaven given among men by which we must be saved ...

Why then the Law? It was added because of transgressions, until the Seed should come to those to whom it had been promised, being ordained through angels in the Mediator's hand ...

For God is one, and there is one Mediator of God and of men, the Man Christ Jesus, who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time."

[Acts4:12; Galatians3:19; 1Timothy2:5-6MKJV].

"For Jesus, in the days of His flesh, when He had offered up prayers and supplications with strong cryings and tears to Him who was able to save Him from death, and was heard in that He feared, though being a Son, yet He learned obedience by the things which He suffered. And being perfected, He became the Author of eternal salvation to all those who obey Him, being called by God a high priest after the order of Melchizedek ...

"But now He [JESUS] has obtained a more excellent ministry, by so much He is also the Mediator of a better covenant, which was built upon better promises ...

"And for this cause He is the Mediator of the new covenant, so that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first covenant, those who are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance ...

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

" ... and to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than that of Abel ...

"See that you do not refuse Him who speaks. For if they did not escape, those who refused him that spoke on earth, much more we shall not escape if we turn away from Him who speaks from Heaven ..."

[Hebrews5:7-10; 8:6; 9:15; 12:24-25MKJV].

14. **Proposition #14: Forgiveness of Sin through Jesus Christ.** If we confess our sins to Jesus Christ the Saviour, He will forgive us and cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

"For God so loved the world that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world might be saved through Him.

"But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His Word is not in us."

[John3:16-17; 1John1:7-10MKJV].

15. **Proposition #15: Damnation without Jesus Christ.** If we refuse to repent and believe the Gospel, we will die in our sins.

" ... and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God draws near. Repent, and believe the gospel ...

"I tell you, No. But unless you repent, you will all likewise perish. Or those eighteen on whom the tower in Siloam fell and killed them, do you think that they were sinners above all men who lived in Jerusalem? I tell you, No. But unless you repent, you will all likewise perish ...

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"For God so loved the world that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but so that the world might be saved through Him. He who believes on Him is not condemned, but he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only-begotten Son of God ...

"Therefore I [JESUS] said to you that you shall die in your sins, for if you do not believe that I AM, you shall die in your sins."

[Mark1:15; Luke13:3-5; John3:16-18; 8:24MKJV].

16. **Proposition #16: Honouring Jesus Christ.** The Bible teaches that we should honour Jesus Christ as we honour God the Father.

"For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son, so that all should honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him ...

"If anyone serves Me, let him follow Me; and where I am, there also My servant shall be. If anyone serves Me, the Father will honor him ...

"Let not your heart be troubled. You believe in God, believe also in Me ...

"I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the Ending, the First and the Last."

[John5:22-23; 12:26; 14:1; Revelation22:13MKJV].

17. **Proposition #17: Words of Jesus Christ.** Heaven & Earth shall pass away, but the words of Christ shall not pass away.

"The heaven and the earth shall pass away, but My Words shall not pass away."

[Matthew24:35MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

18. **Proposition #18: The exalted position of Jesus Christ.** Jesus Christ is seated at the *Right Hand of God the Father.*

"And He said to them, How do they say that Christ is the Son of David? Even David himself says in the Book of Psalms, "The LORD said to my Lord, Sit at My right hand until I place Your enemies as Your footstool ...

"From now on the Son of Man shall sit at the right hand of the power of God ...

"But being full of the Holy Spirit, looking up intently into Heaven, he saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at the right hand of God. And he said, Behold, I see Heaven opened and the Son of Man standing on the right hand of God."

[Luke20:41-43; 22:69; Acts7:55-56MKJV].

19. **Proposition #19: Ashamed of Christ.** For whosoever shall be ashamed of Jesus and His words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's, and of the holy angels.

"For whoever shall be ashamed of Me and of My Words, the Son of Man shall be ashamed of him when He shall come in His own and in His Father's glory, and that of the holy angels."

[Luke9:26MKJV].

20. **Proposition #20: Justification by Jesus Christ.** Justification of believers only by the blood of and through Jesus Christ.

"But now a righteousness of God has been revealed apart from Law, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets; even the righteousness of God through the faith of Jesus Christ, toward all and upon all those who believe. For there is no difference, for all have sinned and come short of the glory of God, being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus."

[Romans3:21-24MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

21. **Proposition #21: The Second Coming of Jesus Christ.** Jesus Christ shall return.

"And this gospel of the kingdom shall be proclaimed in all the world as a witness to all nations. And then the end shall come ....

"And immediately after the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be darkened and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from the heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken. And then the sign of the Son of Man shall appear in the heavens. And then all the tribes of the earth shall mourn, and they shall see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of the heaven with power and great glory.

"Behold, He comes with the clouds, and every eye will see Him, and those who pierced Him will see Him, and all the kindreds of the earth will wail because of Him. Even so, Amen."

[Matthew24:14, 29-30; Revelation1:7MKJV].

22. **Proposition #22: Presiding at the Great White Throne Judgment.** Judgment has been delegated by God the Father to Jesus Christ who will be the *Chief Justice* presiding at the *Great White Throne Judgement.*

"For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son, so that all should honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He who does not honor the Son does not honor the Father who sent Him. ...

For as the Father has life in Himself, so He has given to the Son to have life within Himself, and has given Him authority to execute judgment also, because He is the Son of Man ...

"But why do you judge your brother? Or also why do you despise your brother? For all shall stand before the judgment seat of Christ ...

"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, so that each one may receive the things done through the body, according to that which he has done, whether good or bad."

[John5:22-23, 26-27; Romans14:10, 2Corinthians5:10MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

23. **Proposition #23: Jesus Christ delivering the Kingdom back to the Father.** In the end Jesus Christ will deliver the Kingdom to God the Father after He had made to cease all rule, authority and power.

> *"For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ all will be made alive. But each in his own order: Christ the first-fruit, and afterward they who are Christ's at His coming; then is the end, when He delivers the kingdom to God, even the Father; when He makes to cease all rule and all authority and power."*
>
> [1Corinthians15:22-24MKJV].

24. **Proposition 24: Jesus Christ the 'True Vine'.** Jesus Christ is the True Vine.

> *"I am the True Vine, and My Father is the Vinedresser."*
>
> [John15:1MKJV].

25. **Proposition #25: Jesus Christ the 'Way, the Truth and the Life'.** Jesus Christ is the Way, the Truth and the Life.

> *"Jesus said to him, I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life; no one comes to the Father but by Me ...*
>
> *"Pilate then said to Him, Are you a king then? Jesus answered, You say it that I am a king. To this end I was born, and for this cause I came into the world, that I should bear witness to the truth. Everyone who is of the truth hears My voice."*
>
> [John14:6; 18:37MKJV].

26. **Proposition #26: Jesus Christ the Cornerstone.** Jesus Christ, the stone that the builders rejected at Calvary (Golgotha) has become the *Chief Cornerstone ('Head of the Corner')*. The Apostle Peter writes:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"Therefore also it is contained in the Scripture: 'Behold, I lay in Zion a chief corner Stone, elect, precious, and he who believes on Him shall never be ashamed. Therefore to you who believe is the honor. But to those who are disobedient, He is the Stone which the builders rejected; this One came to be the Head of the corner, and a Stone-of-stumbling and a Rock-of-offense to those disobeying, who stumble at the Word, to which they also were appointed.' "

[1Peter2:6-8MKJV].

27. **Proposition #27: Jesus Christ and the Fountain of Living Waters.** Jesus Christ, the Lamb of God, will lead all believers to the *Fountain of Living Waters;* and God will wipe away all tears from their eyes.

"For the Lamb who is in the midst of the throne will feed them and will lead them to the fountains of living waters. And God will wipe away all tears from their eyes ...

"And God will wipe away all tears from their eyes. And there will be no more death, nor mourning, nor crying out, nor will there be any more pain; for the first things passed away.

[Revelation7:17; 21:4MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 41

CLIMBING MOUNT GOLGOTHA

A Mountain Taller, Steeper & More Lethal Than Mount Everest

1. **The Prince of Life on a Mission.** How did He, a person so used to the majestic beauty, comforts and privileges of His Heavenly home, manage to come down to this vale of tears to die for the sins of the world? Even the demotion of a Lichtenstein prince from his palace to the salt mines of Siberia would not properly describe the heights from which the *Prince of Life* has had to stoop for our sake; and (to add further insult to injury) has also had to even descend to the lower pits of damnation to take the keys of hell and of death away from His ancient adversary, the Devil.

2. **How did He do it?** How did He manage to gather the immense moral and spiritual resolve to suffer the cruel Roman scourging, the brutal crown of thorns, the merciless insults and beatings of the Jerusalem riffraff and finally, the enemy's *pièce de résistance* ... the Roman cross of crucifixion (hence the word for extreme pain, i.e., 'excruciating')? Jesus did, however, warn:

> *"For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost ...*
> *For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many ...*
> *I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep...*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends."

[Matthew18:11; Mark10:45; John10:11; 15:13KJV].

3. **Iron nails of Love.** Christ managed to accomplish what no one before Him had ever managed to do by climbing *Mount Golgotha* to be crucified as God the Father's 'paschal lamb' for the sins of the world, and the chains that had held Him to the rugged cross were not the iron spikes of the executioner, it was the iron nails of His LOVE for a lost mankind and *the ultimate JOY of holy anticipation* ... a salvaged creation!

4. **Joy trumped Pain.** I recently have read of how a cat had gone into a burning building over and over (five times, with angry fires raging) to save her new little litter of five ... sometimes nature's call to love or nurture has, it would appear, been engraved in our DNA and emblazoned on our hearts by the Holy God in whose image we have been created. In His mind's eye, Jesus Christ must have been able to see (or at least envisage) the millions of lost souls, widows, orphans and aborted babies (!) futuristically entering Heaven with their bitter tears finally wiped from their faces by God the Father Himself as facilitated by His sacrifice on the cross. The Bible says:

"Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the JOY that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God."

[Hebrews12:2KJV].

"For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God ...

For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe ...

But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks foolishness ...

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men."

[1Corinthians1:18,21,23,25KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 42

DID JESUS CHRIST KNOW SCIENCE?

Is the Sky Blue? Is Grass Green?

1. **Did Jesus Christ Know Science?** To this question I cannot help but to respond with: "Is grass green? Is the sky blue? Is water wet?" The notion entertained by some people, even by some Christians, that Jesus of Nazareth was some kind of a semi-illiterate first century ignoramus and deluded (albeit sincere) 'religious fanatic' on a passionate quest to reform His local synagogue, is one of the worst errors they can ever make about this humble carpenter rabbi from Nazareth. Notes:

1.1 Jesus **Christ was the *Projects Engineer* responsible for the creation of the Universe.** The Bible says:

> *"God, who at many times and in many ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, has in these last days spoken to us by His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the worlds, who being the shining splendor of His glory, and the express image of His essence, and upholding all things by the word of His power ..."*
>
> [Hebrews1:1-3aMKJV].

1.2 **As *Creator of the Universe,* Jesus Christ was obviously acquainted with the workings of Science.** Examples: Such scientific phenomena as *Universal Gravitation,* the *Strong & Weak Nuclear Forces,* the *Electromagnetic Spectrum, the*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Periodic Table of the Elements, Acoustics, Quantum Mechanics, Astrophysics, Celestial Mechanics & Universal Constants etc. So unfathomably profound was the mysterious world which He represented (and had hailed from) that the Apostle Paul could at best exclaim:

> *"And I know such a man (whether in the body, or outside of the body, I do not know; God knows), that he was caught up into Paradise and heard unspeakable words, which it is not allowed for a man to utter."*
>
> [2Corinthians12:3-4MKJV].

2. **Why Did Jesus Not Teach More 'Natural Science'?** My submission is that Jesus' problem was His notoriously unsophisticated, first-century 'audience'; He simply could not discuss even today's 21st century science with His public, let alone the mysterious science of the HEAVENLY realm from whence He had hailed. At the time He lamented:

> *"If I have told you earthly things and you do not believe, how shall you believe if I tell you heavenly things?"*
>
> [John3:12MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 43

FACE TO FACE WITH THE AUTHOR OF LIFE

Seven Steps to Cosmic Fulfilment

1. **A Message to Atheists, Agnostics & Skeptics.** After years of confronting unbelievers and atheists of all and diverse kinds (even in my own family circle) I have concluded that the atheist's most primeval cry, notwithstanding the banality, cynicism, profanity and even blasphemy at times, is a cry toward the Creator, i.e., a desperate reaching out in despair for life's meaning, purpose and personal cosmic fulfilment.

True atheists, i.e., the ones that will (in mortal fear) still refuse or simply neglect to cry out to God for help on their deathbed, are probably comparatively rare; most of them are still only fumbling apprentices in an alien, broken, overwhelming and petrifying Universe of unfathomable scope and size.

2. **Seven Steps to Cosmic Fulfilment.**

2.1 **Seek God with all your heart.**

"And you shall seek Me and find Me, when you search for Me with all your heart."

[Jeremiah29:13MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2.2 **God is a Rewarder of those who believe that He IS [EXISTS] and diligently seek Him.**

"But without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him."

[Hebrews11:6MKJV].

2.3 **Draw near to God and He will draw near to you.**

"Draw near to God, and He will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, sinners; and purify your hearts, doubleminded ones."

[James4:8MKJV].

"But it is good for me to draw near to God: I have put my trust in the Lord GOD, that I may declare all thy works."

[Psalm73:28MKJV].

"Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water."

[Hebrews10:22MKJV].

2.4 **The pure in heart shall see God.**

"Blessed are the pure in heart! For they shall see God."

[Matthew5:8MKJV].

2.5 **Love God and He will make His Abode (Home) with you.**

"Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him."

[John14:23KJV].

2.6 **Repent and believe the Gospel.**

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel ... I tell you, Nay, but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish."

[Mark1:15; Luke13;3KJV].

2.7 Pray God to write your name in His Book of Remembrance & Book of Life.

"But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his [JESUS'] name."

[John1:12KJV].

"Then they that feared the LORD spake often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon his name."

[Malachi3:16KJV].

"He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels."

[Revelation3:5KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 44

HOW HIS CONTEMPORARIES ATTESTED TO THE INCORRUPTIBLE CHARACTER OF JESUS CHRIST

'He Spake as No Man Before Him'

1. **The Apostle Peter.** Addressing the crowds complicit in the crucifixion of Jesus Christ:

> *"But you denied the Holy and Just One [JESUS] and desired a murderer to be given to you. And you killed the Prince of Life [JESUS] whom God has raised from the dead, of which we are witnesses."*
>
> [Acts3:14-15MKJV].

2. **The Apostle John (the 'beloved disciple').**

> *"And you know that He [JESUS] was revealed that He might take away our sins, and in Him [JESUS] is no sin."*
>
> [1John3:5MKJV].

3. **The Apostle Paul.**

> *"For He [GOD THE FATHER] has made Him [JESUS] who knew no sin, to be sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in Him."*
>
> [2Corinthians5:21MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

4. **The Devout Ananias.**

"And he said, The God of our fathers has chosen you to know His will and to see the Just One [JESUS] and to hear a voice out of His mouth."

[Acts 22:14MKJV].

5. **The dying Thief on the cross alongside Jesus Christ.**

"And we indeed justly so, for we receive the due reward of our deeds, but this Man [JESUS] has done nothing amiss."

[Luke23:41MKJV].

6. **The Roman Centurion at the crucifixion scene.**

"And when the centurion saw what had been done, he glorified God, saying, Truly this Man [JESUS] was righteous."

[Luke23:47MKJV].

7. **Pontius Pilate's Wife.**

"But as he [PILATE] was sitting down on the judgment seat, his wife sent to him, saying, Have nothing to do with that just man [JESUS] for today because of Him I have suffered many things in a dream."

[Matthew27:19MKJV].

8. **Pontius Pilate.**

"Pilate said to Him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again to the Jews and said to them, I find no fault in him [JESUS]."

[John18:38MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

9. **Judas Iscarioth.**

"Then he who had betrayed Him [JESUS] seeing that He was condemned, sorrowing, Judas returned the thirty pieces of silver again to the chief priests and elders, saying, I have sinned, betraying innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? You see to that."

[Matthew27:3-4MKJV].

10. **The Unclean Spirit.**

"And in their synagogue was a man with an unclean spirit. And he cried out, saying, What is to us and to You, Jesus of Nazareth? Have You come to destroy us? I know You, who You are, the Holy One of God."

[Mark1:23-24MKJV].

11. **Jesus Christ's Testimony.**

"Which of you convicts Me [JESUS] of sin? And if I say the truth, why do you not believe Me?"

[John8:46MKJV].

12. **God the Father.**

"While he yet spoke, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them. And behold a voice out of the cloud which said, This [JESUS] is My beloved Son in whom I am well pleased, hear Him."

[Matthew17:5MKJV].

"But to the Son [JESUS] He [GOD THE FATHER] says, 'Your throne, O God, is forever and ever. A sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of Your kingdom. You have loved

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

righteousness and hated iniquity, therefore God, Your God, has anointed You with the oil of gladness above Your fellows."
[Hebrews1:8-9MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 45

HOW JESUS CHRIST IS BEING VINDICATED IN THE NEWS TODAY

How the Mainstream Media Inadvertently Affirms How the Prophecies of Jesus of Nazareth Are All Being Fulfilled in the World Today

1. **Monitoring the Daily News.** From events reported in the news these days it can be easily deduced that the prophecies of Jesus are being fulfilled and Jesus vindicated as a credible prophet in history. From the Gospels, and especially from Matthew24:3-14 & Luke21:25-26 vindicatory conclusions to the words of Jesus Christ can safely be drawn:

> *"And as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? And what shall be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the world?*
>
> *And Jesus answered and said to them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many will come in My name, saying, I am Christ, and will deceive many. And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars.*
>
> *See that you are not troubled, for all these things must occur; but the end is not yet. For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be famines and pestilences and earthquakes in different places.*
>
> *All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then they will deliver you up to be afflicted and will kill you. And you will be hated of*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

all nations for My name's sake. And then many will be offended, and will betray one another, and will hate one another.

And many false prophets will rise and deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many will become cold. But he who endures to the end, the same shall be kept safe. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be proclaimed in all the world as a witness to all nations. And then the end shall come.

And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars. And on the earth will be anxiety of nations with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; men fainting from fear, and expecting those things which have come on the earth. For the powers of the heavens shall be shaken."

[Matthew24:3-14; Luke21:25-26MKJV].

1.1 Are false Christs (e.g., 'christs', 'saviours', 'gurus', 'messiahs', 'avatars', 'godmen', 'swamis' 'holy men', 'false prophets' etc.) and false religious cults coming increasingly to the fore these days? [YES]

1.2 Do we often, if not daily, hear of wars and rumours of wars? [YES]

1.3 Are nations and kingdoms rising against each other? [YES]

1.4 Are famines experienced and being reported by the media? [YES]

1.5 Are 'pestilences' (epidemics & pandemics) experienced and reported? [YES]

1.6 Are Christians (including defenceless women & children) often being increasingly harassed, hated, persecuted & even killed by diabolical anti-Christian forces? [YES]

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

1.7 Does iniquity (e.g., vice, crime, injustice, immorality etc.) abound in the land? [YES]

1.8 Do we observe 'signs' in heaven from the sun, moon & stars etc. (natural as well as developments in astronomy e.g., space exploration & travel)? [YES]

1.9 Are nations experiencing anxiety i.r.o. the sea and waves roaring (e.g., killer-floods, typhoons, tsunamis etc.) [YES]

1.10 Is the Gospel of Jesus Christ being preached (published, broadcast etc.) in all of the world today? [YES].

P.S. According to certain online sources and a recent BBC report of 2020 the traditionally Buddhist country of China is (at the annual growth rate of 7%) expected to be >50% Christian by the year 2030.

"And this gospel of the kingdom shall be proclaimed in all the world as a witness to all nations. And then the end shall come."
[Matthew24:14MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 46

JESUS CHRIST: HIS PROPHECIES AS THEY PLAYED OUT THEN AND NOW

Amazing Coincidence: 33 Prophecies Fulfilled (One for Each Year of His Life on Earth)

Prophecy #1. The Nature and Purpose of His Incarnation.
[John3:17; 10:10].

Prophecy #2. The Benediction of His Angel Host.
[John1:51; Matthew4:11; Mark1:13].

Prophecy #3. The Rejection of His Messianic claims by Religious Leaders (Sanhedrin, Sadducees, Scribes).
[Matthew21:38,42; Acts4:17].

Prophecy #4. The Defection of His Disciples (e.g., Peter, Luke, all of the disciples).
[Matthew26:21; John16:32].

Prophecy #5. The Martyrdom of Peter.
[John21:18-19; 2Peter1:13-14].

Prophecy #6. The Preparations for His Supper.
[Mark14:13; 1Corinthians11:23].

Prophecy #7. His Brutal Treatment by His Foes.
[Mark10:34; Luke18:32].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Prophecy #8. The Cruel Death He Should Die. [Matthew20:18-19; 26:2; John12:32-33].

Prophecy #9. The Burial of His Body.
[Matthew12:40; John12:7].

Prophecy #10. The Resurrection of His Body from the Grave.
[Matthew26:32; John2:19].

Prophecy #11. His Ascension & Exaltation to Glory.
[Luke24:51; John6:32; 20:17].

Prophecy #12. The Coming of His Spirit.
[John14:26; 15:26; 16:7,8; Acts1:5; 2:1-4].

Prophecy #13. The Creation of His Church ('Ecclesia').
[Matthew13:45,46;16:18; Acts2:40,47; 1Peter2:6-7].

Prophecy #14. The Destruction of Jerusalem.
[Matthew24:1,2; Luke19:44].

Prophecy #15. The Universal Ingathering of Souls through His Gospel.
[Mark13:10; 16:17; John10:16].

Prophecy #16. The Fulfilment of His Predictions.
[Matthew24:34; 26:23; Mark13:31].

Prophecy #17-#18. Continuing & Developing Apostasy and Appearances of False Christs.
[Luke18:8; 2Thessalonians2:1-3; 2Peter2:1-22; Matthew24:4,23; Mark13:5].

Prophecy #19-#20. Continuous Opposition to His Gospel & World Hatred of His Followers.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[Matthew10:34-36; Luke12:49-53; Matthew18:7; John15:18-21; 16:33].

Prophecy #21-#22. Continuous Ministry of the Spirit on behalf of & His Intercession in Glory for His Church.
[John7:37-39; 14:16,17; 16:7-15].

Prophecy #23. Continuous Salvation by Grace of Jews & Gentiles.
[Luke19:9; John4:22; 10:16; 11:52; Acts13:14, 46].

Prophecy #24. Satanic & Messianic Deception.
[Matthew24:4,5,11,24].

Prophecy #25. International Wars & Rumours of War.
[Matthew24:6].

Prophecy #26. Development of World Confederacies /Coalitions.
[Matthew24:7].

Prophecy #27. Universal Catastrophes.
[Matthew24:7].

Prophecy #28. Universal Anti-Semitism.
[Matthew-24:9,10].

Prophecy #29. Abounding Iniquity & Spiritual Declension.
[Matthew24:12].

Prophecy #30. Jerusalem 'Compassed' about with Armies.
[Luke21:20-24].

Prophecy #31. International Upheavals, Distress & Unrest.
[Luke21:25,26].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Prophecy #32. Manifestation of Jewish & Gentile Nationalism. [Luke21:29-33].
Prophecy #33. Warnings as to the Snare of Worldliness. [Luke21:34-36].

P.S. Interesting 'coincidence' ... 33 prophetic utterances identified ... one for each year of Jesus Christ's His life (He was crucified aged 33).

"Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen."

[Revelation1:7KJV].

References

1. Lockyear, Herbert (1973) *All the Messianic Prophecies of the Bible.* Zondervan Publishing House.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 47

JESUS CHRIST: MESSIAH OR JUST A GREAT TEACHER?

'Great Teachers' Would Never Lie About Their Origins, Status & Powers

1. **Greatest teacher in history?** So many times these days do I hear or read the words (my paraphrasing): "I may not be a religious man and may not consider Jesus Christ as the Son of God or as the Messiah, but I do follow the teachings of Jesus as the greatest moral teacher of history who stood for a sound, commendable social system of morality and ethics." Some definitions:

> 1.1 **Messiah.** *'The expected king and deliverer of the Jews' / 'a professed or accepted leader of some hope or cause'.*
>
> [Merriam-Webster].

> 1.2 **Teacher.** *'One that teaches' / 'one whose occupation is to instruct'.*
>
> [Merriam-Webster].

2. **Unpacking the logic.** Although off-the-cuff comments like these may sound very sagacious and noble to less serious, superficial students of philosophy and religion, the speaker could not have made a worse error of philosophy and logic with the epithet, 'Jesus just a great teacher'.

Do the math: A truly 'great moral teacher' would for instance never:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

- falsely claim that he is the 'Son of God' (a person of divine origin & status).

- falsely claim the authority (i) to forgive people their sins and (ii) grant them the gift of Salvation & 'Everlasting Life'.

- falsely deceive people by using illusions, slight-of-hand and the conjurer's tricks to create the erroneous impression with the gullible public that he can perform authentic Biblical-quality 'miracles' etc.

- be a compulsive liar about his origin, divine status, mission and powers over man and nature.

Surely (really) great teachers from real life would recognise the snake-oil salesman of a fake teacher when they see one? Take a man like C. S. Lewis (1898-1963), in real life author of *The Chronicles of Narnia,* Oxford don and later Professor of Renaissance Literature at Cambridge who, as a reaction to those who claimed that Jesus Christ was nothing more than 'just a great moral teacher', has said:

"I am trying here to prevent anyone saying the really foolish thing that people often say about Him: 'I'm ready to accept Jesus as a great moral teacher, but I don't accept his claim to be God.' That is the one thing we must not say. A man who was merely a man and said the sort of things Jesus said would not be a great moral teacher. He would either be a lunatic – on the level with the man who says he is a poached egg – or else he would be the Devil of Hell. You must make your choice. Either this man was, and is, the Son of God, or else a madman or something worse. You can shut him up for a fool, you can spit at him and kill him as a demon or you can fall at his feet and call him Lord and God, but let us not come with any patronising nonsense about his being a great human teacher. He has not left that open to us. He did not intend to."

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

C.S. Lewis should know ... he was after all an expert in myths, legends and fairy tales. He then followed up with:

> *"A man who was merely a man and said the sort of things Jesus said would not be a great moral teacher."*

Irrefutable anecdotal evidence (in other words outside the evidence of Scripture in terms of the messianic prophecies that ran like a golden thread from Genesis through Malachi in history up to the birth of Christ) to affirm the divine, messianic status of Jesus Christ nevertheless came surprisingly from some of Jesus of Nazareth's worst enemies, and what better testimonial could He have wished for:

> *"Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation."*
>
> [John11:47-48MKJV].

References

1. Lewis, C.S. *Mere Christianity*. Geoffrey Bles/Macmillan. U.K.
2. Wikipedia. *C.S. Lewis.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 48

JESUS CHRIST: ROCK OF AGES

Rock of Ages, Cleft for me; Let me Hide myself in Thee!

1. **Who is the Rock upon which the Church of Jesus Christ is Founded?** During conversation the rumour often comes around to the effect that, according to tradition, the *Apostle Peter* is the designated 'Rock' upon which the *Church of Jesus Christ* is built (founded), a tradition that has given rise to some misunderstanding surrounding the role and position of the Apostle Peter in the founding of the *Ecclesia* (the universal *Church of Jesus Christ* comprising all those Evangelically-driven Christian movements and denominations who confess Jesus Christ as *(i) the Son of God*, *(ii) the Saviour of the world* and (iii) the *Messiah of the Jews.*

My submission is that it is erroneous that the Apostle Peter should be considered as the foundation of the Christian Church as some are inclined to do. For instance:

- did the Apostle Peter die on a cross for the sins of the world?
- Is the Apostle Peter the Saviour of mankind?
- Is the Apostle Peter the Messiah of the Jews?

2. **Reasons why the Apostle Peter could not have qualified as the 'Rock' upon which the Church of Jesus Christ is founded.**

2.1 Peter was *married* and on one occasion Jesus even has had to heal Peter's sick *mother-in-law* (in the RC Church

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

where Peter is revered as the 'Rock' upon which the church is built and 'first Pope', the Pope is not allowed to marry).

"And when Jesus had come into Peter's house, He saw his wife's mother laid out and in a fever. And He touched her hand, and the fever left her. And she arose and served them."

[Matthew8:14MKJV].

"But Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever, and at once they told Him about her. And He came and took her by the hand and lifted her up. And instantly the fever left her, and she served them."

[Mark1:30-31MKJV].

"And rising up from the synagogue, He entered into Simon's house. And Simon's wife's mother was being seized with a great fever. And they asked Him for her. And standing over her, He rebuked the fever. And it left her. And immediately she arose and served them."

[Luke4:38-39MKJV].

2.2 Peter was considered 'apostate' in his understanding of the calling of Christ and on one occasion even has had to be rebuked by Jesus for that *("Get behind me, Satan!")* ... hardly a candidate for the position of 'Pope'.

"And Jesus answered and said to him [PETER], Get behind me, Satan! For it is written, "You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him only shall you serve."

[Luke4:8MKJV].

2.3 Before the cock crowed, Peter denied Jesus not fewer than at least three times.

"And He said, I say to you, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day before you shall deny knowing Me three times ... [LATER] And Peter said, Man, I do not know what you say. And immediately, while he still spoke, the cock crowed. And the Lord turned and looked on Peter. And Peter remembered the word of

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

the Lord, how He had said to him, Before the cock crows, you shall deny Me three times. And Peter went out and wept bitterly."
[Luke22:34,60-62MKJV].

2.4 Peter had a volatile temper and later in the *Garden of Gethsemane* he severed the ear of Malchus with his sword (which Jesus had to fix).

"Then Simon Peter, having a sword, drew it and struck the high priest's servant and cut off his right ear. And the servant's name was Malchus. Then Jesus said to Peter, Put up your sword into the sheath. The cup which My Father has given Me, shall I not drink it?
[John18:10-11MKJV].

2.5 Had Peter been the 'Rock' (e.g., the first 'Pope') it would have been ecclesiastically quite improper for the Apostle Paul to rebuke Peter about spiritual matters.

"But when Peter came to Antioch, I [Paul] opposed him to his face, because he was to be blamed. For before some came from James, he ate with the nations. But when they came, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing those of the circumcision. And the rest of the Jews also dissembled with him, so as even Barnabas was led away with their dissembling. But when I saw that they did not walk uprightly with the truth of the gospel, I said to Peter before all, If you, being a Jew, live as a Gentile, and not as the Jews, why do you compel the nations to judaize?"
[Galatians2:11-14MKJV].

3. **Jesus Christ, not Peter, is the ROCK upon which the Church is founded.** Reasons are clear:

3.1 **'Petra' vs. 'Petros'.** In their conversation Jesus revealed Himself to Peter as the ROCK *(Gk. Petra; 'a mass of rock')* * upon which He would build His church while Peter

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

was described as being no more than a 'piece of rock' *(Gk. Petros: 'a piece of rock') *.*

*****Refer to original Greek for context. What Jesus had meant was that *Peter and the rest of the disciples* would (with the *prophets* of old) eventually become the 'foundation' ('pieces of rock') upon which the church would be built, with Jesus Christ 'a mass of' *Rock and chief Cornerstone.*

"And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Barjona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it."

[Matthew16:16-18MKJV].

3.2 **A 'Spiritual Rock'.** Jesus was the 'Spiritual Rock' in the Wilderness (during the Exodus).

"... And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ."

[1Corinthians10:4MKJV].

3.3 **A 'Stumbling-stone & Rock-of-Offence'.** It was prophesied that Jesus Christ would become the *'Stumbling-stone and Rock-of-Offense'.*

"As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling-stone and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him [Jesus Christ] shall not be ashamed."

[Romans-9:33MKJV].

"And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed."

[1Peter2:4, 6-8MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

3.4 **'One Mediator' only.** Jesus Christ is the *One and Only Mediator* between God and man.

"For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus."

[1Timothy2:5MKJV].

"And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone."

[Ephesians2:20MKJV].

3.5 **No 'other Foundation'.** There is no other Foundation (Chief Cornerstone) but Christ.

"For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ."

[1Corinthians3:11MKJV].

3.6 **The Apostle Peter himself (!) affirmed Jesus Christ as the 'Chief Corner Stone'.** The Apostle Peter himself declared Jesus Christ the 'Living, Chief Corner Stone'. Referring to Jesus Christ:

"Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings, As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby: If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious. To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious, Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed."

[1Peter2:1-8MKJV].

3.7 **No other name but the 'Name of Jesus Christ' by which we must be saved.** Salvation comes by no other *Cornerstone and Name* but that of Jesus Christ whereby we are saved.

"This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."

[Acts4:11-12MKJV].

4. **Conclusion.** The *Roman Catholic* movement is founded dogmatically on the doctrine that the Apostle Peter ('Gk. Petros: 'a piece of rock') was the 'first pope' of the Church. *Evangelical Christianity* is founded on the doctrine that Jesus Christ is the Rock (Gk. Petra: 'a massive rock') upon which the Church is founded. Apparently anticipating heresy, the Bible warns:

4.1 **Call no man (ecclesiastically) 'Father'.**

"And call no one your father on the earth, for One is your Father in Heaven."

[Matthew23:9MKJV].

4.2 **Forbidding to marry.**

"But the Spirit expressly says that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and teachings of demons, speaking lies in hypocrisy, being seared in their own conscience, forbidding to marry ... ".

[1Timothy4:1-3aMKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

References

1. E-Sword.net *King James Version (KJV+).* Online. 2021
2. Young, Robert (1879) *Young's Analytical Concordance to the Bible.*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 49

JESUS CHRIST: SON OF MAN

Son of God; Son of David & Son of Man

1. **Names & Appellations of Jesus Christ.** During a Bible study some years ago, I have identified almost 300 names and/or appellations for Jesus Christ in the Bible. Readers interested in the topic are welcome to access the list at *'Names & Titles of Jesus Christ'* elsewhere in this publication. Based on text from the *King James Version* of the Bible (because it is public domain) it is by no means necessarily an exhaustive list, but probably still useful for students of *Christology.*

With this concise article, I am, however, more interested in the particular title of *'Jesus Christ: Son of Man'* of the three familiar titles attributed to Him in the Bible, i.e., *'Son of God'; 'Son of David' & 'Son of Man'.*

2. **Jesus Christ: Son of Man.** Some notes:

2.1 **Proposition #1.** Evangelical Christians believe that texts below (among many others) are only a few of the many *messianic prophecies* from the *Old Testament,* in *Judaism* the Hebrew Bible, anticipating the coming of Jesus Christ to this world:

> *"For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace."*
>
> [Isaiah9:6MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him."

[Psalm2:12MKJV].

"And one shall say unto him, What are these wounds in thine hands? Then he shall answer, Those with which I was wounded in the house of my friends."

[Zechariah13:6MKJV].

"For dogs have compassed me: the assembly of the wicked have inclosed me: they pierced my hands and my feet."

[Psalm22:16MKJV].

"Who hath believed our report? and to whom is the arm of the LORD revealed? For he shall grow up before him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: he hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see him, there is no beauty that we should desire him. He is despised and rejected of men; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.

"Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.

"He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, yet he opened not his mouth: he is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so he openeth not his mouth. He was taken from prison and from judgment: and who shall declare his generation? for he was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of my people was he stricken. And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death; because he had done no violence, neither was any deceit in his mouth.

"Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise him; he hath put him to grief: when thou shalt make his soul an offering for sin, he shall see his seed, he shall prolong his days, and the pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in his hand. He shall see of the travail of his soul, and shall be satisfied: by his knowledge shall my righteous servant justify many; for he shall bear their iniquities. Therefore

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

will I divide him a portion with the great, and he shall divide the spoil with the strong; because he hath poured out his soul unto death: and he was numbered with the transgressors; and he bare the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors."

[Isaiah53:1-12KJV].

"The Spirit of the Lord GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; he hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; To proclaim the acceptable year of the LORD, and the day of vengeance of our God; to comfort all that mourn; To appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called trees of righteousness, the planting of the LORD, that he might be glorified."

[Isaiah61:1-3KJV].

2. **Proposition #2.** Bear in mind that Jesus Christ, being the Son of Man and Son of God simultaneously (as part of the Trinity) does not represent a 'mathematical contradiction' at all, as the prayer of Jesus (in John Chapter 17:1-26) aptly demonstrates.

P.S. In transfinite mathematics, INFINITY [e.g., the Trinity] may be 'separated' from ONE [Christ] and still remain unaffected as INFINITY, i.e., Infinity minus 1 = Infinity). Whether Jesus is referred to as the 'Son of Man' or the 'Son of God' and part of the Trinity, His divinity remains nevertheless affirmed by e.g., the Apostle Paul:

"For in him [JESUS] dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily."

[Colossians2:9KJV].

In practical terms it means that God the Father is YHWH ('Jehovah'); Jesus Christ (the Son) is YHWH ('Jehovah' and the Holy Spirit (the 'Paraclete') is YHWH ('Jehovah'). The

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

mind of man cannot comprehend this concept for the simple reason that the mind of finite man will never be able to comprehend Infinity. Only Infinity can comprehend Infinity. Contemplating the wickedness of some men, God lamented while explaining:

> *"For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the LORD. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts."*
>
> [Isaiah55:8-9KJV].

3. **Proposition #3.** The term 'Son of Man' thus not only denotes the humanity of Christ, but also His divinity as prophesied by the Prophet Daniel about the distant future in the Book of Daniel:

> *"I saw in the night visions, and, behold, one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him ..."*
>
> [Daniel7:13-14a].

References

1. E-Sword. *Jesus Christ: Son of Man.* 2021.
2. Nave's Topical Bible. *Jesus Christ: Son of Man.* E-Sword.net. 2021.
3. Young's Concordance of the Bible (1879) *Jesus Christ: Son of Man.*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 50

JESUS CHRIST: THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD

The Seven Basic Properties of Light Applied to the Man Christ Jesus

1. **The Seven Basic Properties of Light.** The seven basic properties are:

- REFLECTION of light.
- REFRACTION of light.
- DIFFRACTION of light.
- INTERFERENCE of light.
- POLARIZATION of light.
- DISPERSION of light.
- SCATTERING of light.

1.1 **Reflection of His LIGHT.** The Apostle Paul writes about Christ ('spiritual reflection of the light of Christ):

"Who being the brightness of his [the Father's] glory, and the express image of his [THE FATHER'S] person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he [CHRIST] had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty [THE FATHER] on high."

[Hebrews1:3KJV].

1.2 **Refraction of His LIGHT.** Definition of 'Refraction:

"Refraction is the bending of light ... as it passes from one transparent substance into another. This bending by refraction

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

makes it possible for us to have magnifying glasses, prisms and rainbows."

[ScienceLearningHub].

During the calling of Paul on the road to Damascus, Christ explained His mission as follows (spiritual refraction of the light of Christ):

"To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me."

[Acts26:18KJV].

1.3 Diffraction of His LIGHT.

"Light bends when it passes around an edge or through a slit. This bending is called diffraction."

[Exploratorium].

When we were unable to rise to the level of God, Christ, the express image of the Father, condescended by bending down to us (spiritual diffraction of the light of Christ):

" ... but [JESUS] made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Himself the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men. And being found in fashion as a man, he [JESUS] humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross."

[Philippians2:7-8KJV].

1.4 Interference of His LIGHT.

"A phenomenon in which two (e.g., LIGHT) waves superpose to form a resultant wave of greater, lower, or the same amplitude."

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[Wikipedia].

The Bible says (spiritual interference of the light of Christ):

"And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice [from the Father] came out of the cloud, saying, This [Jesus] is my beloved Son: hear him."

[Mark9:7KJV].

1.5 Polarization of His LIGHT.

"It is possible to transform unpolarized light into polarized light. Polarized light waves are light waves in which the vibrations occur in a single (e.g., 'perpendicular') plane ('polarization')."

[PhysicsClassroom].

The Bible says (spiritual polarization of the light of Christ):

"Therefore he [JESUS] says, Awake, sleeping ones! And arise from the dead, and Christ shall give you light."

[Ephesians5:14KJV].

1.6 Dispersion of His LIGHT.

"Dispersion is defined to be the spreading of white light into its full spectrum of wavelengths. Refraction is responsible for dispersion in rainbows and many other situations."

[LumenLearning].

Jesus has commanded (spiritual dispersion of the light of Christ):

"Therefore go and teach all nations ..."

[Matthew28:19aKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

1.7 **Scattering of His LIGHT.**

"Scattering of light is the phenomenon in which light rays get deviated from its straight path on striking an obstacle like dust or gas molecules, water vapours etc. giving rise to many spectacular phenomena."

[cK12].

The Bible says (in respect of the spiritual scattering of the light of Christ):

"After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands."

[Revelation7:9KJV].

2. **The Light of the world.** Jesus has said:

"And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God."

[John3:19-21KJV].

"Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life ... As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world ... I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness."

[John8:12; 9:5; 12:46KJV].

3. **The Apostle John.**

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light. This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all ... And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof ... And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it ... And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever."

[John5:35; 1John1:5; Revelation21:23-24; 22:5KJV].

4. **The Apostle Paul.**

"To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me ... In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them ... For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ ... Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen."

[Acts26:18; 2Corinthians4:4,6; 1Timothy6:15,16KJV].

5. **The Apostle Peter.**

"But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light."

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[1Peter2:9KJV].

References

1. cK12. *Scattering of Light.* Online 2021.
2. Exploratorium. *Diffraction of Light.* Online 2021.
3. Lumen Learning. *Dispersion of Light.* Online 2021.
4. Physics Classroom. *Polarization of Light.* Online 2021.
5. Science Learning Hub. *Refraction of Light.* Online 2021.
6. Wikipedia. *Interference of Light.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 51

JESUS CHRIST: THE STONE THAT THE BUILDERS REJECTED

The Rejected Stone That Became the Chief Cornerstone

1. **Names & Appellations of Jesus Christ.** One of the many descriptions of Jesus Christ is *'The Stone that the Builders Rejected'.* During His life and ministry, Jesus Christ was rejected by many, e.g.:

1.1 The Pharisees, Sadducees & Scribes (the theologians and religious authorities of His day).

1.2 The Sanhedrin (the Jewish Religious Council).

1.3 Herod Antipas (21 B.C -39 A.D.) (the Jewish lackey of the Roman occupiers).

1.4 The bulk of the citizens of Jerusalem, Capernaum etc.

1.5 Judas Iscarioth, a disciple of Jesus Christ.

1.6 Pontius Pilate (About 20 B.C. – 36 A.D.) (Roman governor of Palestine at the time of the crucifixion).

1.7 Even Jesus' own disciples were, except for the Apostle John (the 'beloved disciple') and the few women followers

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

like Mary Magdalene, Mary (Mother of Jesus) and an aunt also by the name of Mary, conspicuous in their absence at the crucifixion, with the Apostle Peter even denouncing Jesus in public at His hearing three times.

The chorus of the popular gospel song by Ira Stanphill goes:

"A rugged cross became His throne;
His kingdom was in hearts alone.
He wrote His love in crimson red,
And wore the thorns upon His head."

©1952NewSpring

2. **Jesus Christ is still being rejected today.** Though millions have, through the centuries, accepted Jesus Christ as Lord & Saviour, millions are still rejecting Him today, e.g.:

2.1 Atheists, agnostics, Darwinists, secular humanists, skeptics, pagans, Christian atheists* (!) & heathens.

2.2 Leftist & postmodernist professors, theologians, philosophers; and all kinds of 'super' intellectuals.

2.3 Satanists, hedonists, naturalists, materialists, evolutionists & all non-Christians (advertently or otherwise).
2.4 Criminals, warmongers, religious & political cultists & terrorists etc.

3. **The Stone that the Builders Rejected.** During His ministry Jesus Christ has warned:

"Jesus said to them, Did you never read in the Scriptures, 'The stone which the builders rejected, this One has become the head

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

of the corner; this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes?'"

[Matthew21:42MKJV].

Sadly, as mentioned earlier, some denominations are still rejecting the Chief Cornerstone (Jesus Christ, the 'massive rock', Gk. *Petra*) in favour of the Apostle Peter (the 'small pebble', Gk. *Petros*).

4. **Paul in his epistle to the Ephesians.**

"Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God; And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone."

[Ephesians 2:19-20KJV].

5. **Paul to the Romans.**

"Behold, I lay in Zion a stumbling-stone and a rock-of-offense, and everyone believing on Him shall not be put to shame."

[Romans9:33bMKJV].

Jesus Christ warns: *"And He looked at them and said, What then is this which is written, 'The Stone which the builders rejected, the same has become the Head of the corner? Whoever shall fall on that Stone shall be broken, but on whomever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder."*

[Luke20:17-18MKJV].

*"Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock * was Christ."*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

[1Corinthians10:1-4KJV].

*Christ (not Peter!).

5.1 **Jesus** = 'Petra' (Gk. 'a massive rock').

5.2 **Peter** = 'Petros' (Gk. 'a piece of rock').

References

1. E-Sword.net *King James Version of the Bible (KJV+).* Online 2021.
2. Name That Hymn.com. *A Crown of Thorns.* Lyrics. Online 2021.
3. Robert Young L.L.D., *'Analytical Concordance to the Bible',* W.B. Eerdmans, Grand Rapids, Michigan (1975).
4. Stanphill, Ira F. (1952*) A Crown of Thorns.* Gospel Song.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 52

NAMES AND TITLES OF JESUS CHRIST

[Source: *King James Version* of the Bible].

A
Advocate With the Father *1 Jhn.2:1*
Almighty *Rev.1:8*
Alpha & Omega (*Gk.* A&Z, Beginning & Ending) *Rev.1:8; Rev.22:13*
Amen, The (*Heb.* So be it/So it is) *Rev.3:14*
Angel *Gen.48:16; Exod.23:20,21*
Angel of His Presence *Isa.63:9*
Anointed One (His) (*See* Christ/Messiah/Shiloh) *Ps.2:2*
Apostle of Our Profession, The (*Gk. Apostolos* – One sent forth) *Heb.3:1*
Arm of the Lord *Isa.51:9*
Author & Finisher of Our Faith, The *Heb.12:2*

B
Beginning & End (*Gk.* A-Z) (*See* Alpha & Omega) *Rev.1:8; Rev.22:13*
Beginning of the Creation of God *Rev.3:14*
Beloved *Ephes.1:6*
Beloved Son *Luke9:35; 1Cor4:17; 2Peter1:17*
Blessed And Only Potentate *1 Tim.6:15*
Branch, The *Zch.3:8*
Bread Of Life *Jhn.6:48*
Bridegroom, The *Matt.9:15*
Bright And Morning Star, The *Rev.22:16*
Brightness Of His (the Father's) Glory, The Heb.*1:3*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Bringing Many Sons unto Glory (See *Isa.9:6*) *Heb.2:10*
Brother Of James, Juda, Joses & Simon *Mrk.6:3*

C
Captain Of Salvation *Heb.2:10*
Captain Of the Host of The Lord *Jos.5:14*
Carpenter, The *Mrk.6:3*
Carpenter's Son, The *Matt.13:55*
Chiefest Among Ten Thousand, The *SongofSolomon.5:10*
Chief Shepherd, The *1 Pet.5:4*
Child (A) *Isa.9:6*
Child Jesus, The *Luk.2:27*
Christ (*Gk.* Anointed One; *Matt.1:16;* Servant of The Lord. *See* Messiah) *Mrk.14:61*
Christ A King *Luk.23:2*
Christ Jesus *Acts 19:4; Rom.3:24; 8:1; 16:3; 1 Cor.1:2;30; Heb.3:1;1 Pet.5:10,14;1 Tim.1:15.*
Christ Jesus Our Lord *1 Tim.1:12; Rom.8:39*
Christ of God, The *Luk.9:20*
Christ of the Lord *Luk.2:26*
Christ Our Passover *1 Cor.5:7*
Christ the Chosen One of God *Luk.23:35*
Christ The Lord *Luk.2:11*
Commander to the People *Isa.55:4*
Consolation Of Israel *Luk.2:25*
Cornerstone (Chief), The *Ephes.2:20; Matt.21:42*
Counsellor *Isa.9:6*
Covenant Of the People *Isa.42:6*
Creator Of Israel, The *Isa.43:15*
Crown of Glory and Diadem of Beauty unto the Residue of His People, A *Isa.28:5*

D
David, King of Israel and Judah *Jer.30:9*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Daysman Betwixt Us, A (Mediator) *Job 9:33*
Dayspring From on High *Luk.1:78*
Door Of the Sheep, The *Jhn.10:7*
Day Star, The *2 Pet.1:19*

E
Elect, Precious & Chief Cornerstone *1 Pet.2:6*
Elect (God's) *Isa.42:1*
Emmanuel (*Gk.* God With Us) *Matt.1:23*
Ensign Of the People, An *Isa.11:10*
Eternal Life *1 Jhn.5:20*
Everlasting Father (*See* Heb.2:10) *Isa.9:6*
Everlasting Light *Isa.60:20*
Express Image of His (God's) Person *Heb.1:3*

F
Faithful & True *Rev.19:11*
Faithful & True Witness *Rev.3:14*
Faithful Witness *Rev.1:5*
Fear and Dread of Israel *Isa.8:13*
First And Last *Rev.22:13; Rev.1:17 Rev.2:8; Isa.48:12*
First Begotten of the Dead *Rev.1:5*
Firstbegotten Into the World *Heb.1:6*
Firstborn Higher Than the Kings of the Earth *Ps.89:27*
Forerunner, The *Heb.6:20*
Friend Of Publicans & Sinners, A *Matt.11:19*

G
Gift Of God, The *Jhn.4:10*
Gin & Snare to Inhabitants of Jerusalem *Isa.8:14*
Glory of the People Israel *Luk.2:32*
God (*Heb.* 'Worshipful One'; 'Lord'; 'Jehovah': *Heb.*Yahweh, YHWH, 'The Existing
One'; 'Elohim'; *Ps.45,7,8;*Mighty One'; 'Master') *Jhn.1:1; Heb.1:8,9*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

God Believed on in the World *1 Tim.3:16*
God Blessed Forever *Rom.9:5*
God Justified in the Spirit *1 Tim.3:16*
God Manifested in the Flesh *1 Tim.3:16*
God of Israel *Isa.45:15*
God of the Whole Earth, The *Isa.54:5*
God Our Saviour *1 Tim.2:3*
God Preached unto the Gentiles *1 Tim.3:16*
God Received up into Glory *1 Tim.3:16*
God Seen of Angels 1 Tim.3:16
God's Fellow *Zch.13:7*
God's Holy One *Ps.16:10*
God's Servant Israel *Isa.49:3*
God With Us (*See* Emmánuel/Immánuel) *Matt.1:23*
Good Master *Matt.19:16*
Governor for Israel (A) *Matt.2:6*
Great God and Our Saviour Jesus Christ *Tit.2:13*
Great High Priest, A *Heb.4:14*
Great Shepherd of the Sheep, The *Heb.13:20*

H

Head of Every Man, The *1 Cor.11:3*
Head of the Church *Ephes.5:23; Col.1:18*
Head of the Corner *Matt.21:42; 1 Pet.2:7*
Heir of All Things *Heb.1:2*
He That Hath the Key of David *Rev.3:7*
He That Is Holy *Rev.3:7*
He That Is True *Rev.3:7*
He That Openeth, and No Man Shutteth *Rev.3:7*
He That Shutteth, and No Man Openeth *Rev.3:7*
High Priest, An *Heb.8:1*
High Priest Forever After the Order of Melchisedec *Heb.6:20*
High Priest of Our Profession *Heb.3:1*
Him Which Is, and Which Was, and Which Is to Come *Rev.1:4*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

His (God's) Dear Son *Col.1:13*
Holy And Just One *Acts 3:14*
Holy Child Jesus, The LORD's *Acts 4:30*
Holy One of God, The *Mrk.1:24*
Holy One of Israel, The *Isa.41:14;* 49:7; *54:5*
Holy One (Your) *Isa.43:15*
Holy Thing, That (*Heb.* Separated One) *Luk.1:35*
Horn of Our Salvation (*See* Salvation) *Luk.1:69*

I

I Am *Jhn.8:58*
Immánuel (Heb. God With Us) *Isa.7:14; Matt.1:23*

J

Jehovah (See God) *Exod.6:3; Ps.83:18; Isa.12:2; 26:4*
Jehovah-Jireh (God Who Provides) *Gen.22:14*
Jehovah-Nissi (God Is My Banner) *Exod.17:15*
Jehovah-Shalom (God Is Peace) *Judg.6:24*
Jesus (Heb.Yeshuah, Saviour) *Matt.1:16;1:21*
Jesus Christ (See Christ) *Matt.1:1; Jhn.1:17; Acts 2:38; Rom.1:1; 1 Cor.2:2; 2Cor.1:19; Gal.2:16; Phil.1:8; Heb.13:8; 1 Jhn.1:7* etc.
Jesus Christ Our Lord *Rom.1:3*
Jesus Christ Our Saviour *Tit.3:6*
Jesus Christ the Righteous *1 Jhn.2:1*
Jesus, King of the Jews *Matt.27:37*
Jesus of Nazareth *Mrk.1:24; Luk.24:19*
Jesus of Nazareth, the King of the Jews *Jhn.19:19*
Jesus, Son of Joseph *Jhn.6:42*
Jesus the Christ *Matt.16:20*
Jesus the Son of God *Heb.4:14*
Judge, Our *Isa.33:22*
Judge of the Quick (Living) And the Dead, The *Acts 10:42*
Judge of Israel *Mic.5:1*
Just Man, That *Matt27:19*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

K
King, the Lord our Isa.33:22
King, Your Isa.43.15
King David their Jer.30:9
King of Glory Ps.24:9,10
King of Israel Jhn.1:49
KING of Kings 1 Tim.6:15 Rev.17:14; 19:16
King of the Daughter of Zion Matt.21:5
King of the Jews, Jesus of Nazareth, The
(See Nazarene) Jhn.19:19
King Over All the Earth Zch.14:9

L
Lamb *Rev.5:6,8; 6:16; 7:9,10,17; 12:11; 13:8;14:1,4; 15:3; 17:14; 19:7,9; 21:9,14,22,23,27*
Lamb Of God *Jhn.1:29*
Last Adam, The *1 Cor.15:45*
Lawgiver, Our *Isa.33:22*
Leader And Commander to the People *Isa.55:4*
Light of life *Jhn.8:12*
Light of the Gentiles *Isa.42:6*
Lily of the Valley *Song of Solomon 2:1*
Living Bread That Came Down from Heaven, The *Jhn.6:51*
Living One That Has the Keys of Hell and Death *Rev.1:18*
Living Stone *1 Pet.2:4*
Light of the World, The *Jhn.8:12*
Light To Lighten the Gentiles, And the Glory of Thy People Israel *Luk.2:32*
Lion And Lord Out of the Tribe of Judah *Heb.7:14; Rev.5:5*
Lord, The (*See* God) *Isa.40:3*
Lord From Heaven, The *1 Cor.15:47*
Lord God Almighty *Rev.15:3*
Lord Jehovah, The *Isaiah12:2*
Lord Jesus *Acts7:59/Col.3:17/1 Thess.4:2*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Lord Jesus Christ *1 Cor.1:2,3; Acts 11:17 Rom.5:1,11; Acts16:31; 20:21*
Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of Glory *Jas.2:1*
Lord Jesus Christ Our Saviour *Tit.1:4*
Lord Mighty in Battle *Ps.24:8*
Lord of All *Acts10:36; Rom.10:12*
Lord of Both the Dead and Living Rom.14:9
LORD of Lords *1 Tim.6:15; Rev.17:14; 19:16*
Lord of the Hosts *Ps.24:10 Isa.54:5*
Lord of the Sabbath *Mrk.2:28*
Lord Our Righteousness, The Jer.*23:6*
Lord's Christ, The *Luke.2:26*

M
Maker Of Jacob & Israel *Isa.44:2*
Man Christ Jesus, The *1 Tim.2:5*
Man of Sorrows & Acquainted with Grief *Isa.53:3*
Man, That Is God's Fellow *Zch.13:7*
Master (*See* Rabbi/Rabboni/God) *Matt.23:8*
Mediator Between God and Man, One *1 Tim.2:5*
Messenger of the Covenant *Mal.3:1*
Messiah (*Heb.* Anointed One. *See* Christ). *Jhn.1:41*
Messiah the Prince, The *Dan.9:25*
Mighty God, The *Isa.9:6*
Mighty One of Jacob, The *Isa.49:26*
Mighty One of Israel, The *Isa.30:29*
Mighty to Save *Isa.63:1*
Minister of the Sanctuary & True Tabernacle, A *Heb.8:2*
Most Holy *Dan.9:24*
Most Mighty *Ps.45:3*

N
Nazaréne, A (From *Nazáreth,* not *Nazarite*) *Matt.2:23*

O

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Only Begotten of the Father *Jhn.1:14*
Only Begotten Son Which Is in the Bosom of the Father, The *Jhn.1:18*
Only Wise God Our Saviour, The *Jud.1:25*
Our Lord & Saviour Jesus Christ *2 Pet.1:11; 2 Pet.3:18*
Our Passover, Christ *1Cor.5:7*
Our Peace (He Is) *Ephes.2:14*

P
Petra (*Gk.* Rock) *Matt.16:18*
Physician, A *Matt.9:12*
Power Of God, The *1 Cor.1:24*
Precious Cornerstone, A Chief, Elect, A Tried, Sure Foundation *1 Pet.2:6; Isa.28:16*
Priest Forever After the Order of Melchisedec *Heb.7:17*
Prince (Messiah The) *Dan.9:25*
Prince of Life, The *Acts 3:15*
Prophet, A *Deut.18:15,18; Luk.24:19*
Prophet of Nasareth of Galilee, The *Matt.21:11*
Propitiation For Our Sins *1 Jhn.2:2*
Prince of Peace, The *Isa.9:6; Gen.49:10* (see Shiloh)
Prince of the Kings of the Earth, The *Rev.1:5*

Q
Quickening Spirit, The Last Adam was made a 1 *Cor.15:45*

R
Rabbi (*Ch./Heb.* Eminent One; Teacher) *Jhn.1:49*
Rabboni (*Aram. /Heb./Gk.)* ("Master!") *Jhn.20:16*
Ransom For All to Be Tested in Due Time *1 Tim.2:6*
Redeemer and Holy One of Israel *Isa.41:14; 48:17; 54:5*
Resurrection and Life, The *Jhn.11:25*
Righteous Servant (God's) *Isa.53:11*
Righteous Judge, The *2 Tim.4:8*
Righteous Branch, A Jer.*23:5*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Rock (*Gk.* Petra) *Matt.16:18*
Rock (Spiritual) *1 Cor.10:4*
Root & Offspring of David, The *Rev.5:5; Rev.22:16*
Root of Jesse, A *Isa.11:10*
Root Out of a Dry Ground, As a *Isa.53:2*
Root of David, The *Rev.5:5; 22:16*
Rose of Sharon. The *SongofS.2:1*

S

Salvation/Salvation unto the End of the Earth, My (*Heb.* Prosperity) *Isa.49:6; Luk.2:30*
Sanctuary, A *Isa.8:14*
Saviour Isa.49:26; Matt.1:21; Ephes.5:23; Luk. 2:11; 2 Tim.1:10; Tit.2:13; 1Joh.4:14
Isa.43:3,11; 45:15
Sceptre Out of Israel *Num.24:17*
Second Man the Lord from Heaven, The *1 Cor.15:47*
Seed of Judah (*See* Shiloh) *Gen.49:10*
Seed of the Woman, The *Gen.3:15*
Servant the Branch, God's *Zch.3:8; Isa.42:1*
Servant of Rulers *Isa.49:7*
Shepherd and Bishop of Our Souls, The *1 Pet.2:25*
Shepherd of Israel *Ps.80:1*
Shiloh (*Heb.* Anointed One; Prince of Peace); *(See* Seed of Judah) *Gen.49:10*
Son (A) *Isa.9:6*
Son of a Carpenter ('Carpenter's Son') *Matt.13:55*
Son of David *Matt.9:27*

Son of God *Ps.2:7; 89:27*
Matt.3:17; 4:3,6; 11:27; 14:33
Mrk.1:1; 1:11; 3:11; 5:7; 9:7; 14:61,62; 15:39
Luk.1:32,35; 3:22; 4:3,9; 8:28; 9:35; 10:22; 20:13; 22:29,70
Jhn.1:1,2,14,18,34,49; 3:16,17,18,34,35,36;
5:19,20,21,23,26,27,30,32,36,37; 6:27,38,40,46,57,69;

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

7:16,28,29; 8:16,19,26,27,28,29,38,40,42,49, 54;
9:35,36,37,38
Acts3:13,26
2Cor.1:3,19
Gal.1:16; 4:4
Ephes.1:3; 3:14
Col.1:19
Rom.1:3,4,9; 8:3,29,32
1Cor.1:9; 15:24
1Thess.1:10
Heb.1:1,2,3,5; 4:14; 5:5,8,10; 6:6; 7:3; 10:29
2Pet.1:17
1Jhn.1:7; 2:22,23,24; 3:8,23; 4:9,10, 14
Rev.2:18

Son Of Man
Matt.11:19; 16:27,28;18:11; 20:28;26:2;26:45,64
Mark.2:28;9:9,12;10:33,45;14:21,62
Luk.5:24; 17:22,24; 18:31; 19:10; 21:36;22:48,69
Joh.5:27; 12:34; 13:31
Acts7:56
Rev.1:13; 14:14

Son Of Mary *Mrk.6:3*
Son of the Blessed (God, The) *Mrk.14:61*
Son of the Father *2Jhn.1:3*
Son of the Highest, The *Luk.1:32*
Spirit (Quickening) *1 Cor.15:45*
Spiritual Rock, That *1 Cor.10:4*
Star Out of Jacob, A *Num.24:17*
Stone of Stumbling & Rock of Offense, To Both the Houses of Israel *Isa.8:14*
Stone Which the Builders Rejected *Matt. 21:42*
Stone Which the Builders Disallowed *1 Pet.2:7*
Sun of Righteousness, The *Mal.4:2*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Sure Foundation, A *Isa.28:16*
Surety of a Better Testament *Heb.7:22*

T
Teacher Come from God, A *Jhn.3:2*
Tender Plant, A *Isa.53:2*
Tried Stone, A *Isa.28:16*
True God and Eternal Life, The *1 Jhn.5:20*
True Light Which Lighteth Every Man That Cometh into the World *Jhn.1:9*
True Vine (The) *Jhn.15:1*

W
Way, Truth & Life, The *Jhn.14:6*
Wonderful *Isa.9:6*
Word, The *Jhn.1:1*
Word of God, The *Rev.19:13*
Word of Life, The *1 Jhn.1:1*
Wisdom *Prov.8:12*
Wisdom of God, The *1 Cor.1:24*
Wisdom and Righteousness and Sanctification and Redemption *1 Cor.1:30*
Witness To the People, A *Isa.55:4.*

References

1. 'E-Sword.net. *The Sword of the Lord with an Electronic Edge.* Online 2021.
2. Nave. Orville J. A.M., D.D., L.L.D., *'Nave's Topical Bible',* Moody Press, Chicago (1973)
3. The Holy Bible' (KJV).
4. Young, Robert L.L.D., *'Analytical Concordance to The Bible',* W.B. Eerdmans, Grand Rapids, Michigan (1975).

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 53

NINE THINGS THAT SADDENED JESUS CHRIST'S HEART

Four Days Late For His Friend's Funeral ... But Still On Time

1. **When Lazarus died.**

> *"When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled ... Jesus wept."*
>
> [John11:33,35KJV].

2. **Confronting the Unbelief of the Scribes & Pharisees of the day.**

> *"And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not."*
>
> [John8:45KJV].

3. **The impenitent attitudes of the people of Chorazin & Bethsaida.**

> *"Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes."*
>
> [Matthew11:21KJV].

4. **The impenitent attitudes of the people of Jerusalem.**

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not!"

[Luke13:34KJV].

5. **Teaching Nicodemus, a Pharisee and ruler of the Jews.**

"If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of heavenly things?"

[John3:12KJV].

6. **At the treachery of Judas Iscariot.**

"But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?"

[Luke22:48KJV].

7. **In Gethsemane during the night-vigil with His disciples.**

"And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch one hour?"

[Mark14:37KJV].

8. **The Apostle Peter's denouncement of Christ.**

"And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And Peter went out, and wept bitterly."

[Luke22:61-62KJV].

9. **During the Crucifixion.**

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?"

[Matthew27:46KJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 54

WHY DIAMONDS ARE SO VALUABLE

'Diamonds are Forever'

1. **The Cullinan Diamond.** We live about an hour's drive from the *Premier Mine* in South Africa where the world's largest gem-quality diamond ever was found, i.e., the *Cullinan (3,106.75 carats/621.35 g)* on 26 January 1905.

Some estimates put the value of the diamond, which was cut by *J. Asscher & Co. of Amsterdam* into 9 larger and about 100 smaller diamonds and then taken up into the British crown jewels in 1907, at about $2billion in today's prices (2021).

In its online article, Diamond Rocks writes why diamonds are so valuable, i.e.:

- Diamonds are considered the ultimate gift and undying flame of love.
- Diamonds reminds us of romance and legend.
- Diamonds are a symbol of strength and courage.
- Diamonds elicit awe from onlookers.
- Diamonds 'subdue'.
- Diamonds are dazzling, brilliant and mesmerizing.

[Diamond Rocks].

2. **As applied to the life and ministry of Jesus Christ, also known as the 'Pearl of Great Price':**

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

2.1 **It is considered the ultimate gift and undying flame of love.**

"For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."

[Romans6:23KJV].

4.2 **It reminds us of romance & legend.**

"No one has greater love than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends."

[John15:13KJV].

2.3 **It is a symbol of strength & courage.**

" ... looking to Jesus the Author and Finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and sat down at the right of the throne of God."

[Hebrews12:2KJV].

2.4 **It elicits awe from onlookers.**

" ... the Son [JESUS CHRIST] ... who being the shining splendor of His [God the Father's] glory, and the express image of His [God the Father's] essence, and upholding all things by the word of His power, through Himself cleansing of our sins, He [JESUS CHRIST] sat down on the right of the Majesty on high [God the Father] being made so much better than the angels, as He [JESUS CHRIST] has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they."

[Hebrews1:3-4KJV].

2.5 **Diamond: Meaning from 'Adamao' (Gk): 'I tame, I subdue'.**

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"And He [God the Father] has put all things under His [JESUS'] feet and gave Him [JESUS] to be Head over all things to the church."

[Ephesians1:22KJV].

"And so it is written, 'The first man, Adam, became a living soul, the last Adam [JESUS, 'Adamao'] was a life-giving Spirit.'"

[1Corinthians15:45KJV].

1.6 It is dazzling, brilliant & mesmerizing.

"For He [JESUS CHRIST] in His own time will reveal who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords, who alone has immortality, dwelling in light which cannot be approached, whom no one of men have seen, nor can see; to whom be honor and power everlasting."

[1Timothy6:14b, 15, 16KJV].

2. The Wisdom of Jesus Christ.

"Again, the kingdom of Heaven is like treasure hidden in a field, which when a man has found it, he hides it, and for the joy of it goes and sells all that he has, and buys that field. Again, the kingdom of Heaven is like a merchant seeking beautiful pearls; who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it."

[Matthew13:44-46KJV].

References

1. Diamond Rocks. *Why Are Diamonds So Valuable?* London. Online. 2021.
2. Wikipedia. *Cullinan Diamond.* Online 2021.

Chapter 55

THE LION SHALL ROAR OUT OF ZION

From a Paschal Lamb to a Conquering Lion

1. **As a Lamb to the slaughter.** When Jesus Christ first made an appearance on this earth and in the dusty streets of Jerusalem, He has gone, as the Bible says, *'as a lamb to the slaughter'.* Meek and submissive, without saying a word (and quite 'unmessianic' like, according to the political sentiments of His day) He was led to the cross at Calvary (Golgotha) for His cruel execution at the hands of the rowdy, agitating mob and nimble fingers of the Roman soldiers. The Bible says:

> *"He was oppressed, and He was afflicted; yet He opened not His mouth. He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter; and as a sheep before its shearers is dumb, so He opened not His mouth."*
>
> [Isaiah53:7KJV].

2. **Jesus Christ was no spineless pacifist.** Jesus Christ was more than able to round up a fledgling army from His crowds of followers, and His total stock of reinforcements probably unconquerable. He has said:

> *"Do you think that I cannot now pray to My Father, and He shall presently give Me more than twelve legions of angels?"*
>
> [Matthew26:53MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

This event clearly demonstrates the fallacy of Jesus as a sworn pacifist; on the contrary, had His kingdom been from this world His followers would have fought for Him as He has explained to Pontius Pilate:

> *"Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world. If My kingdom were of this world, then My servants would fight so that I might not be delivered to the Jews. But now My kingdom is not from here."*
>
> [John18:36MKJV].

3. **From a Lamb to a Lion.** This time around, at the Second Coming, Jesus will not arrive as *a meek and helpless Lamb,* but as the *Lion from the tribe of Judah.* The Bible says:

> *"Behold, He comes with the clouds, and every eye will see Him, and those who pierced Him will see Him ..."*
>
> [Revelation1:7aMKJV].
>
> *"Jehovah shall also roar out of Zion and utter His voice from Jerusalem. And the heavens and the earth shall shake."*
>
> [Joel3:16aMKJV].
>
> *" ... do not weep. Behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David [JESUS CHRIST] has prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals of it."*
>
> [Revelation5:5bMKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 56

THE LORD IS MY SHEPHERD

He Maketh Me to Lie Down in Green Pastures; He Leadeth Me Beside Still Waters

1. Some Messianic References to Jesus Christ the Coming 'Shepherd'.

" ... who says of Cyrus, He is My shepherd, and shall do all My pleasure; even saying to Jerusalem, You shall be built; and to the temple, Your foundation shall be laid."

[Isaiah44:28MKJV].

"As a shepherd seeks out his flock in the day that he is among his scattered sheep, so I will seek out My sheep and will deliver them out of all places where they have been scattered in the cloudy and dark day ... And I will set up one Shepherd over them, and He shall feed them, My servant David. He shall feed them, and He shall be their Shepherd ... And David My servant shall be King over them. And there shall be one Shepherd to all of them. And they shall walk in My judgments, and obey My Laws, and do them."

[Ezekiel34:12, 23;37:24MKJV].

"Hear the Word of Jehovah, O nations, and declare it in the coastlands afar off. And say, He who scattered Israel will gather him and keep him, as a shepherd keeps his flock."

[Jeremiah31:10MKJV].

"Awake, O sword, against My Shepherd, and against the Man who is My companion, says Jehovah of Hosts; strike the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered. And I will turn My hand on the little ones."

[Zechariah13:7MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"Then Jesus said to them, All of you will be offended because of Me this night. For it is written, 'I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.' "

[Matthew26:31MKJV].

"I am the Good Shepherd. The Good Shepherd lays down His life for the sheep. But he who is a hireling and not the shepherd, who does not own the sheep, sees the wolf coming and leaves the sheep and runs away. And the wolf catches them and scatters the sheep. The hireling flees, because he is a hireling and does not care for the sheep. I am the Good Shepherd, and I know those that are Mine, and I am known by those who are Mine. Even as the Father knows Me, I also know the Father. And I lay down My life for the sheep. And I have other sheep who are not of this fold. I must also lead those, and they shall hear My voice, and there shall be one flock, one Shepherd."

[John10:11-16MKJV].

"Now may the God of peace (who brought again our Lord Jesus from the dead, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant)."

[Hebrews13:20MKJV].

"For you were as sheep going astray, but now you are turned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls ... And when the Chief Shepherd shall appear, you shall receive a never-fading crown of glory."

[1Peter2:25; 5:4].

"And out of His mouth goes a sharp sword, so that with it He should strike the nations. And He will shepherd them with a rod of iron. And He treads the winepress of the wine of the anger and of the wrath of Almighty God."

[Revelation19:15MKJV].

2. Christians listen only to the Voice of the Shepherd.

"But he who enters in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. The doorkeeper opens to him, and the sheep hear his voice, and he calls his own sheep by name and leads them out. And when he puts forth his own sheep, he goes before them, and the sheep follow him. For they know his voice. And they will not

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

follow a stranger, but will flee from him, for they do not know the voice of strangers."

[John10:2-5MKJV].

3. **The Good Shepherd lays down His Life for the Sheep.**

"I am the door. If anyone enters in by Me, he shall be saved and shall go in and out and find pasture. The thief does not come except to steal and to kill and to destroy. I have come so that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly. I am the Good Shepherd. The Good Shepherd lays down His life for the sheep."

[John10:9-11MKJV].

4. **The God of Peace will make the believer perfect in every good work through Jesus Christ, that Great Shepherd of the Sheep.**

"Now may the God of peace (who brought again our Lord Jesus from the dead, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant) make you perfect in every good work to do His will, working in you that which is well pleasing in His sight through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory forever and ever. Amen."

[Hebrews13:20-21MKJV].

5. **The Nations wo reject Jesus Christ today will one day be herded with a rod-of-iron by the Great Shepherd when Jesus comes.**

"And I saw Heaven opened. And behold, a white horse! And He sitting on him was called Faithful and True. And in righteousness He judges and makes war. And the armies in Heaven followed Him on white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of His mouth goes a sharp

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

sword, so that with it He should strike the nations. And He will shepherd them with a rod of iron. And He treads the winepress of the wine of the anger and of the wrath of Almighty God."

[Revelation19:11-15MKJV].

6. **David's 23rd Psalm.**

"A Psalm of David. Jehovah is my Shepherd; I shall not want.

He makes me to lie down in green pastures; He leads me beside the still waters.

He restores my soul; He leads me in paths of righteousness for His name's sake.

Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil; for You are with me; Your rod and Your staff, they comfort me.

You prepare a table for me in the presence of my enemies; You anoint my head with oil; my cup runs over.

Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life; and I shall dwell in the house of Jehovah forever."

[Psalm23:1-6MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 57

THE MIRACLE OF THE RIGHTEOUSNESS OF JESUS CHRIST: THE PASCHAL LAMB OF GOD

Sacrificed for the Sins of the World

1. **Heaven's formidable 'Gold Standard'.** If Salvation (Eternal Life) of necessity had to be earned on the personal merit of the preponderance of our inputs of devout piety, pious consecration, saintly devotion and moral excellence, how high would the 'bar' have to be set? What would Heaven's 'gold standard' be? Well, Jesus Christ has already set the gold standard:

> *"For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven."*
>
> [Matthew5:20KJV].

2. **The Scribes & Pharisees.** Who were the 'Scribes' and 'Pharisees'?

> *"Scribes had knowledge of the law and could draft legal documents (contracts for marriage, divorce, loans, inheritance, mortgages, the sale of land, and the like). Every village had at least one scribe. Pharisees were members of a party that believed in resurrection and in following legal traditions that were ascribed not to the Bible but to "the traditions of the fathers." Like the*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

scribes, they were also well-known legal experts: hence the partial overlap of membership of the two groups."

[Britannica.com].

In New Testament times, the Scribes and Pharisees were also known for their exemplary lives, pious religious protocols and strict rules. In other words, Jesus Christ has said that, unless our piety and moral excellence ('holiness') *exceeded* that of the Scribes and Pharisees, we would in no case enter the kingdom of heaven. When the disciples, dismayed, then asked Jesus:

"But who then can be saved?" Jesus replied: "With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible."

[Matthew19:25-26].

3. **Enters the 'Paschal Lamb'.** During the days of Moses and the Children of Israel, people who had sinned had to bring a lamb (flawless and without blemish) to the high priest to be slaughtered as a sin offering (sacrifice) for the remission of their sins. When it had become clear that man's righteousness would never exceed that of the Scribes and the Pharisees (or conform to the demands of the Law of Moses) God sent His Son, Jesus Christ, as the *Paschal Lamb* sin-offering on our behalf. The Bible says:

"Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers; But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot."

[1Peter1:18-19KJV].

4. **The Invitation still stands.** This invitation still stands for all people, irrespective of nation, race, skin tone, ethnicity, culture, socio-economic status, gender and age:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"For if by one man's offence [ADAMS's] death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ. Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one [JESUS CHRIST] the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life."

[Romans5:17-18KJV].

"But now, being made free from sin, and having become slaves to God, you have your fruit to holiness, and the end everlasting life. For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."

[Romans6:22-23].

References

Britannica.com. *Biography of Jesus: Scribes and Pharisees.* Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 58

THE MOST ILLUSTRIOUS ROBE IN THE UNIVERSE

A Garment of Brilliant Light

1. **Jesus Christ: Master of the Cosmos.** Jesus Christ was/is God the Father's de facto *Projects Engineer* who *(i) created the Universe* and still *(ii) upholds all things by the power of His word:*

> *"God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; Being made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they."*
> [Hebrews1:1-4KJV].

2. **God covers Himself with Light as a garment.** The Bible says:

> *"Bless Jehovah, O my soul. O Jehovah my God, You are very great; You have put on honor and majesty, covering Yourself with light as with a robe; and stretching out the heavens like a curtain;"*
> [Psalm104:1-2MKJV].

3. **God the Son as illustrious as His Father.** The Bible says about Jesus Christ:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto; whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen."

[1Timothy6:15-16KJV].

4. **Jesus Christ's Robe of Righteousness the ultimate Prize!** Languishing on the Isle of Patmos, the Apostle John shared this vision of Jesus Christ at the Second Coming:

"His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God. And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean."

[Revelation19:12-14KJV].

5. **The Priceless Invitation.** If you can read this, then the invitation still stands:

"I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see."

[Revelation3:18KJV].

"For you are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus. For as many as were baptized into Christ, you put on Christ."

[Galatians3:26-27MKJV].

"For if by one man's offense death reigned by one, much more they who receive abundance of grace and the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by One, Jesus Christ."

[Romans5:17MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"The one who overcomes, this one will be clothed in white clothing. And I will not blot out his name out of the Book of Life, but I will confess his name before My Father and before His angels."

[Revelation3:5MKJV].

"After these things I looked, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, out of all nations and kindreds and people and tongues, stood before the throne and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, with palms in their hands."

[Revelation7:9MKJV].

6. The Great Commission from the Master of the Universe.

"And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you ..."

[Matthew28:18-20KJV].

"And many of those who sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt. And those who are wise shall shine as the brightness of the sky; and those who turn many to righteousness shall shine as the stars forever and ever."

[Daniel 12:2MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 59

THE NAME OF JESUS CHRIST IS A STRONG TOWER

Tell Me That Name Again!

1. **One Saturday afternoon.** One Saturday afternoon during the 1970s while in my late twenties, still single and at home taking a nap and while in the 'dozing off' stage, I suddenly became aware of a strange, ominous ambience in the room; whereas the afternoon was otherwise sunny and bright, it had now become ominously dark and overcast.

From the hallway I could hear a strange, outlandish music drifting toward my room; music not dissimilar to classical organ music, but in sounds considerably more diabolical and surreal than one would normally have expected, so reminiscent of Lon Chaney's haunting organ music in his old monochrome 'Phantom of the Opera' movie.

The cause for the music was soon established, as for some reason I could suddenly look right through the walls of my room seeing a demonic figure of the most fiendish and satanic appearance slowly sauntering toward my bedroom. It was, in fact, this figure that had been causing that hideous music all the time: It was clad in a scarlet robe from his shoulders down to his toes and with his entire head covered with a medieval iron mask the old medieval knights used to wear in combat. The mask was clearly ancient, worn and chipped displaying vicious markings from the skirmishes of many battles and wars, probably over many centuries.

As this demonic being moved, its body emitted that strange and frightening music as described, almost as if his anatomy was one huge musical instrument from the pit of damnation.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

The nearer he came to the bedroom door, the more incapacitated and paralyzed I seemed to become, even to a point where he had entered the room and I could not even speak to call for help or scream in terror.

2. **The Name of Jesus Christ.** Now, my bed was right at the window with no space between the bed and the drapes covering the window, and this hideous figure, however, nevertheless came to stand between myself and the drapes right beside my bed, lifting his arms (hands in ugly gloves) in the process as if to pick me up and abduct me to his dark abode.

In one last desperate and mighty effort I then gathered the strength to at least call out the name of Jesus (but quite pathetically so ... in barely a whisper):

"Jesus!"

The next moment, in the proverbial 'blinking of an eye', the hideous figure seemed to have popped away into thin air, the clouds have dissipated, the sun was shining outside, and the sparrows were again happily chirping away in the trees.

3. **Vision or dream?** Whether a grizzly vision of and visit by the real thing, or only a nasty dream simulating the real thing, I cannot prove conclusively, but as a young Christian on that day I learned the valuable lesson that Jesus Christ is a friend who sticks closer than a brother and that the *Gates of Hell* shall not prevail against either Him or against His (universal) Church.

In other words, whether I was delivered from *(i) a real threat from the underworld and a visit from a real demon* or *(ii) delivered from an honestly diabolical, debilitating nightmare culminating from the daily challenges and struggles of my time* is really immaterial ... the point is that, when push comes

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

to shove and the chips are down, Jesus Christ delivers when one calls upon His Name. The Bible says:

"O my Strength, let me look to You, for God is my strong tower."
"But I will sing of Your power; yes, I will sing aloud of Your mercy in the morning; for You have been my strong tower and hiding-place in the day of my trouble."
"To You, O my strength, I will sing; for God is my strong tower and the God of my mercy."
"Who will bring me into the strong city? Who will lead me into Edom?"
"For You have been a shelter for me, a strong tower before the enemy."
"He only is my rock and my salvation; He is my tower; I shall not be greatly moved."
"He only is my rock and my salvation; He is my strong tower; I shall not be shaken."
"I am like a wonder to many, but You are my strong tower."
"The name of Jehovah is a strong tower; the righteous man runs into it and is safe."
[Psalm59:9,16,17; 60:9; 61:3; 62:2,6; 71:7; Proverbs18:10MKJV].

4. **Tell me His Name again.** So it happened that, during the early 1980s, my family and I (age 36) had, upon our return from the coast at Hermanus (Western Cape), the opportunity to stop over at the little church in Virginia (Orange Free State) where I, as a strapping teenager of 14, had been introduced in 1962 to Jesus Christ as my Saviour for the first time.

Great was my surprise when I stepped into the familiar foyer of that little country church where a group was preparing for the Sunday service with the that great old Gospel song published in 1913 by George Bennard 1873-1958):

Tell Me His Name Again'.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

P.S. Readers may remember *George Bennard as the* author of the song, *'The Old Rugged Cross'.*

References

1. Bennard, George (1913) *Tell Me His Name Again.* WordWiseHymns.com. Online 2021.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 60

THE PEARL OF GREAT PRICE

A Treasure Richer Than All Of Judas' Tribe

1. **The 'Judas Goat' rises.** The only disciple to have (in an underhanded way) 'profited' from the ministry and fame of Jesus of Nazareth was *Judas Iscarioth,* or Judas of Kerioth; paid thirty pieces of silver, in those days the going rate for a slave, by the *Sanhedrin* ('Jewish Religious Counsel') to betray the Christ.

He was the man, who, according to the New Testament scholar, Steuart McBirnie PhD,

> *"... with a hiss of a kiss, had flung a pearl away ... richer than all his tribe!"*

This proclivity to throw away costly treasure for the fleeting pleasure of short-term gain is not new. Goethe, as quoted by R.P. Downes LL. D in *Hours with the Immortals,* writes:

> *"What win I if I gain the thing I seek? A dream, a breath, a froth of fleeting joy; Who buys a minute's mirth to wail a week, or sells eternity to get a toy?"*
>
> [Johann Wolfgang von Goethe, 1749-1832].

2. **"Eat, drink and be merry!"** The most disconcerting phenomenon in modern society today (regarding the Hereafter) is the cavalier way in which the atheists, atheist-evolutionists, agnostics, neo-pagans and secular humanists etc. are gambling with their future when it comes to the *Kingdom of*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

God, and the casual dismissal of the life, teachings and sacrifice of Jesus Christ as 'irrelevant for today'.

It would appear as if, for many people, short-term interests, hobbies, past-times, have become distractions luring them away from the issues that should really matter, i.e., *what God is like and what He wants from us.* Writes Jewish philosopher, Joshua Loth Liebman:

> *"The more immature we are, the more we cry out for the satisfaction of inconsistent and irreconcilable delights ... We have to weigh a present pain against a future pleasure and a present pleasure against a future pain. To do this well is to become an artist in the values of life."*
>
> [Liebman: 221].

My prayer: That God will make us all artists in the values of life! The Bible says:

> *"And to man He said, Behold, the fear of the Lord, that is wisdom! And to depart from evil is understanding!"*
>
> [Job28:28].

References

1. Downes, Robert P. (1906) *Hours with the Immortals.* Charles H. Kelly. U.K.
2. Liebman, Joshua Loth (1966) *Hope for Man.*
3. McBirnie, Wiliam Steuart (1967) *The Search for the Twelve Apostles.*
4. Von Goethe, Johann Wolfgang: As quoted in R.P. Downes' *'Hours with the Immortals'.*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Chapter 61

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT: WHO PRESIDES?

Meet Chief Justice Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ

1. **The Problem.** All people are born sinners in need of *Salvation.* Unable to save ourselves or 'earn' *Eternal Life* on the basis of an exemplary life or personal merit, all of us (atheists included) were confronted with an existential problem of monumental proportions. The Bible says:

> "*The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?"*
>
> [Jeremiah17:9MKJV].

Jesus Christ has solemnly warned:

> *"I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish."*
>
> [Luke13:3KJV].

The Apostle Peter has warned:

> "*Truly, then, God overlooking the times of ignorance, now He strictly commands all men everywhere to repent."*
>
> [Acts17:30MKJV].

2. **The Solution.** The Bible teaches that as as in Adam all die, even so in Christ all will be made alive; and as the first man, Adam, became a living soul, the last Adam [JESUS] was a 'life-giving Spirit'. [1Corinthians-15:22; 45]. The Bible says:

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

"Knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, silver or gold, from your vain manner of life handed down from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot ... "

[1Peter1:18-19MKJV].

"For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."

[Romans6:23MKJV].

3. **The Invitation.** Since God wants *everyone* to be saved, the invitation to repent and come to Christ still stands irrespective of the reader of this mini article's race, skin tone, culture, age, gender, socio-economic status, current religious persuasion or political affiliation:

"Come now, and let us reason together, says Jehovah; though your sins are as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they are red like crimson, they shall be like wool."

[Isaiah1:18MKJV].

Heaven's *de facto* Saviour & Messiah, for mankind, Jesus Christ, invites everyone:

"Come to Me all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke on you and learn of Me, for I am meek and lowly in heart, and you shall find rest to your souls."

[Matthew11:28-29MKJV].

The Apostle John reminds us of the LORD's invitation:

"And the Spirit and the bride say, Come! And let the one hearing say, Come! And let the one who is thirsty come. And he willing, let him take of the Water of Life freely."

[Revelation22:17MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

4. **Judgment: Who Presides?** We are reminded of Jehovah God's sovereign right to preside over the coming *Great White Throne Judgment* in the person of Jesus Christ:

> *"For He said to Moses, 'I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion'."*
>
> [Romans9:15MKJV].

Jesus says:

> *"For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son."*
>
> [John5:22MKJV].

5. **Conclusion.** Those who reject and/or malign and slander Jesus Christ today will, in Heaven one day and at the Great White Throne Judgment, stand before Chief Justice Jesus Christ presiding ... a thought too ghastly (but necessary) to seriously contemplate!

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

INVITATION

"For the wages of sin *is* death, but the gift of God *is* eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord."

[Romans6:23MKJV].

"I call Heaven and earth to record today against you. I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing. Therefore, choose life, so that both you and your seed may live."

[Deuteronomy30:19MKJV].

RSVP

I herewith today accept Jesus Christ as my Lord and Saviour by accepting His invitation to repent and believe the Gospel.

Signed

Date

"And after John was delivered up, Jesus came into Galilee, proclaiming the gospel of the kingdom of God, and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God draws near. Repent, and believe the gospel." [Mark1:15-16MKJV].

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

Recommended Sources

1. Ankerman, John & Weldon, John. *Ready With an Answer.* Eugene, Oregon. Harvest House, 1997.
2. Archer, Gleason L. *The Encyclopedia of Bible Difficulties.* Grand Rapids. Zondervan, 1982.
3. Barnett, Paul. *Is The New Testament History?* Ann Arbor, Michigan. Vine, 1986.
4. Barnett, Paul. *Jesus And the Logic of History.* Grand Rapids. Eerdmans, 1997.
5. Behe, Michael J. *Darwin's Black Box: The Biochemical Challenge to Evolution.* [New York, Touchstone, 1996]
6. Behe, Michael J. et al. *Science And Evidence for Design in The Universe.* San Francisco. Ignatius, 1999].
7. Blomberg, Craig. Edited by Michael J. Wilkins & J.P. Moreland. *Jesus Under Fire.* Grand Rapids. Zondervan, 1995.
8. Blomberg, Craig. *The Historic Reliability of The Gospels.* Downers Groves, Illinois. InterVarsity Press, 1987.
9. Boettner, Loraine. *Roman Catholicism.* London. The Banner of Truth Trust, Presbyterian & Reformed Publishing Co., 1962.
10. Boyd, Gregory A. *Cynic Sage or Son of God? Recovering The Real Jesus in An Age of Revisionist Replies.* Wheaton, Illinois. BridgePoint, 1995.
11. Bruce, F.F. *The Canon of Scripture.* Downers Grove, Illinois. InterVarsity Press, 1988.
12. Bruce, F.F. *The New Testament Documents: Are They Reliable?* Grand Rapids. Eerdmans, 1960.
13. Bruce, F.F. *Jesus and Christian Origins Outside the New Testament.* Grand Rapids. Eerdmans, 1974.
14. Collins, Gary R. *Can You Trust Psychology?* Downers Grove, Illinois. InterVarsity Press, 1988.
15. Craig, William Lane & Zindler, Frank. *Atheism vs. Christianity: Where Does the Evidence Point?* Grand Rapids. Zondervan, 1993.
16. Craig, William Lane. *Reasonable Faith.* Westchester, Illinois. Crossway, 1994.
17. Craig, William. *Enemy At the Gates: The Battle for Stalingrad.*

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

18. Dembski, William. *The Design Revolution: Answering the Toughest Questions About Intelligent Design.* InterVarsity Press, 2004.
19. Denton, Michael. *Nature's Destiny.* New York. The Free Press, 1998.
20. Denton, Michael. *Evolution: A Theory in Crisis.* Mt. Bethesda. Adler & Adler, 1986.
21. Dunn, James. *The Living Word.* Philadelphia. Fortress, 1988.
22. Edwards, William D. et al. *On The Physical Death of Jesus Christ.* Journal Of the American Medical Association (March 21, 1986), pp.1455-63.
23. Ferrell, Vance. B.A., M.A., B.D. *Science versus Evolution.* Evolution-Facts Inc., 2001.
24. Ferrell, Vance. B.A., M.A., B.D. *The Evolution Handbook.* Evolution-Facts Inc., 2001.
25. Finegan, Jack. *The Archaeology of The New Testament.* Princeton. University Press, 1992.
26. Foreman, Dale. *Crucify Him.* Grand Rapids. Zondervan, 1990.
27. Foxe John. *Foxe's Christian Martyrs.* Barbour Publishing Inc., Ohio, 2005.
28. France, R.T. *The Evidence for Jesus.* Downers Grove, Illinois. InterVarsity Press, 1986.
29. Fruchtenbaum, Arnold. *Jesus Was a Jew.* Tustin, California. Ariel Ministries, 1981.
30. Frydland, Rachmiel. *What The Rabbis Know About the Messiah.* Cincinnati. Messianic, 1993.
31. Geisler, Norman L. & William, E. Nix. *A General Introduction to The Bible.* 1968. Chicago. Moody Press, 1980 [Reprint].
32. Goebbels, Joseph. *The Goebbels Diaries.* London, England. Sphere Books Ltd., 1982.
33. Green, Michael. *Christ Is Risen: So, What?* Kent, England. Sovereign World, 1995.
34. Habermas, Gary & Flew, Antony. *Did Jesus Rise from The Dead? The Resurrection Debate.* San Francisco. Harper & Row, 1987.
35. Habermas, Gary & Moreland, J.P. *Beyond Death: Exploring the Evidence for Immortality.* Westchester, Illinois. Crossway, 1998.
36. Habermas, Gary. *The Historical Jesus.* Mo. College Press, 1996.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

37. Hagee, John. *Jerusalem Countdown: A Warning to The World.* Lake Mary, Florida. Frontline, 2006.
38. Ham, Ken. *The Lie: Evolution.* Green Forest, AR. Master Books, 1987.
39. Hanegraff, Hank. *The Face That Demonstrates the Farce of Evolution.* Nashville. Word, 1998.
40. Harris, Murray J. *Jesus As God.* Grand Rapids. Baker, 1993.
41. Harris, Murray J. *Three Crucial Questions About Jesus.* Grand Rapids. Baker, 1991.
42. Hengel, M. *Crucifixion In the Ancient World.* Philadelphia. Fortress, 1977.
43. Hitchens, Peter (2010) The Rage Against God: How Atheism Led Me to Faith. Zondervan
Huyghe René, et al. *Larousse Encyclopedia Of Prehistoric & Ancient Art.* London. Paul Hamlyn, 1957.
44. Johnson, Luke Timothy. *The Real Jesus.* San Francisco. HarperSan Francisco, 1996.
45. Johnson, Phillip E. *Darwin On Trial.* InterVarsity Press, 1993.
46. Josephus, Flavius (Translation: William Whiston, A.M.). *Josephus Complete Works.* Grand Rapids, Michigan. Kregel Publications, 1960.
47. Kaiser, Walter C. Jr. *The Messiah in The Old Testament.* Grand Rapids. Zondervan, 1995.
48. Kuhlman, Kathryn. *I Believe in Miracles.* London, England. Lakeland, Marshall, Morgan & Scott, 1962.
49. Lewis, C.S. *Fern-seed And Elephants.* Glasgow, England. Fount Paperbacks, 1975.
50. Lewis, C.S. *Mere Christianity.* Glasgow, England. Fount Paperbacks, 1944.
51. Lewis, C.S. *Miracles.* London, England. HarperCollins Publishers, 1947.
52. Lewis, C.S. *Surprised By Joy.* London, England. HarperCollins Publishers, 1955.
53. Lewis, C.S. *The Screwtape Letters.* London. Collins-Fontana, 1942.
54. Lewis, C.S. *The Problem of Pain.* London, England. HarperCollins Publishers, 1940.
55. Lindsey, Hal. *The Liberation of Planet Earth.* Zondervan Publishing Company & Bantam Books, 1974, 1976.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

56. Lockyear, Herbert. *All The Messianic Prophecies of The Bible.* Grand Rapids, Michigan. Zondervan Publishing House, 1973.
57. Lubenow, Martin L. *Bones Of Contention.*
58. Marshall, I. Howard. *I Believe in The Historical Jesus.* Grand Rapids. Eerdmans, 1977.
59. Marshall, I. Howard. *The Origins of New Testament Christology.* Downers Grove, Illinois. InterVarsity Press, 1976.
60. Martin, W.J. *The Deity of Christ.* Chicago. Moody Press, 1964.
61. Mc Dowell, Josh & Wilson, Bill. *He Walked Among Us.* Nashville. Nelson, 1994.
62. McBirnie, William Steuart Ph.D. *The Search for The Twelve Apostles.* Illinois. Tyndale House Publishers, 1973.
63. McDowell, Josh & Larson, Bart. *Jesus: A Biblical Defense of His Deity.* San Bernadino, California. Here's Life, 1983.
64. McDowell, Josh. *More Than a Carpenter.* Carol Stream, Illinois. Tyndale House Publishers, Inc., 1977, 2005.
65. McDowell, Josh. *The Resurrection Factor.* San Bernadino. California. Here's Life, 1981.
66. McGrath, Alister. *Dawkins' GOD: Genes, Memes, And the Meaning of Life.* Victoria, Australia. Blackwell Publishing, 2007.
67. McRay, John. *Archaeology And the New Testament.* Grand Rapids, Baker, 1001.
68. Meir, Golda. *My Life.* London, Futura Publications Ltd., 1975.
69. Metzger, Bruce. *The Canon of The New Testament.* Oxford. Clarendon Press, 1987.
70. Moreland, J.P. *Scaling The Secular City.* Grand Rapids. Baker, 1987.
71. Morison, Frank. *Who Moved the Stone?* Grand Rapids. Zondervan, 1987.
72. Moule, C.F.D. *The Origins of Christology.* Cambridge. Cambridge University Press, 1977.
73. Moule, C.F.D. *The Phenomenon of The New Testament.* London. SCM Press, 1967.
74. Pate, C. Marvin & Pate, Sheryl L. *Crucified In the Media.* Grand Rapids, Michigan. Baker Publishing Group, 2005.
75. Patzia, Arthur G. *The Making of The New Testament.* Downers Grove. Illinois. InterVarsity Press, 1995.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

76. Pfeiffer, Charles F. and Vos, Howard F. *The Wycliffe Historical Geography of Bible Lands.* Chicago. Moody Press, 1967.
77. Proctor, William. *The Resurrection Report.* Nashville. Broadman & Holman, 1998.
78. Rosen, Moishe. *Y'shua, The Jewish Way to Say Jesus.* Chicago. Moody Press, 1982.
79. Rosen, Ruth ed. *Jewish Doctors Meet the Great Physician.* San Francisco. Purple Pomegranate, 1997.
80. Russell of Liverpool, Lord. C.B.E., M.C. *The Scourge of The Swastika.* London, England. Cassell & Co, Ltd., 1954.
81. Sada, Georges & Black, Jim Nelson. *Saddam's Secrets.* Brentwood, TN. Integrity Publishers, 2006.
82. Sampson, Philip. *Six Modern Myths.* Downers Grove, Illinois. InterVarsity Press, 2000.
83. Sereny, Gitte. *Speer's Battle with Truth.* London, England. Macmillan General Books, 1995.
84. Sheikh, Bilquis. *I Call Him Father.* Lincoln, Virginia. Chosen Books, 1977.
85. Speer, Albert. *Inside The Third Reich.* London, England. Weidenfeld & Nicolson, 1970.
86. Spurgeon, Charles H. *Lectures To My Students.* Basingstoke, Hants, UK. Marshall, Morgan & Scott.
87. Stott, John. *Basic Christianity.* Grand Rapids. Eerdmans, 1986.
88. Stowell, Joseph. *I Would Follow Jesus.* Chicago. Moody Publishers, 2005.
89. Strobel, Lee. *The Case for A Creator.* Grand Rapids, Michigan. Zondervan Publishing Company, 2004.
90. Strobel, Lee. *The Case for Christ.* Grand Rapids, Michigan. Zondervan Publishing Company, 1998.
91. Strobel, Lee. *The Case for Faith.* Grand Rapids, Michigan. Zondervan Publishing Company.
92. Telchin, Stan. *Betrayed?* Grand Rapids. Chosen, 1982.
93. Ten Boom, Corrie. *The Hiding Place.* Minneapolis, Minnesota. Worldwide Publications, 1971.
94. Thompson, J.A. *The Bible and Archaeology.* Grand Rapids. Eerdmans, 1975.
95. Trevor-Roper, Hugh. *The Last Days of Hitler.* London, England. Pan Books Ltd., 1947.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

96. Warren, Rick. *The Purpose Driven Life*. Grand Rapids, Michigan. Zondervan Publishing Company, 2002.
97. Wells, Jonathan. *Icons Of Evolution: Why Much of What We Teach About Evolution Is Wrong*. Washington, D.C., Regnery, 2000.
98. Witherington, Ben, III. *The Christology of Jesus*. Minneapolis. Fortress, 1990.
99. Wilkins, Michael J. & Moreland, J.P. *Jesus Under Fire*. Grand Rapids. Zondervan, 1995.
100. Yamauchi, Edwin. *The Stones and The Scriptures*. New York. J.B. Lippencott, 1972.
101. Yancey, Philip. *Where Is God When It Hurts?* Grand Rapids, Michigan.
102. Zodhiates, Spiros. *Was Christ God?* Grand Rapids. Eerdmans, 1966.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

CHRISTIANITY: SAVIOUR ON A MISSION

A collection of 61 compact articles in defence of Evangelical Christianity and Biblical Creationism in an age of anarchy, apostasy and all kinds of ideological challenges to the bona fides of Jesus Christ, Saviour of the world and Messiah of the Jews.

To a world replete with modern technological wonders and conveniences, banal rollercoaster entertainment, boring secular superficiality and grave threats of biological warfare comes (even in this profane day and age) the clarion call of Christ's invitation to Salvation in the humble vehicle of the Gospel as unapologetically encapsulated in the priceless words of the humble carpenter-rabbi from Nazareth, excruciatingly ratified by the sacrifice of Calvary and seven times authenticated by the imperishable, time-tested Word of God in the white-hot furnace of history.

Devout Christians will, as the man who never wrote a book but has had more books written about Him in the annals of history than any other man alive, always believe Jesus Christ to be the Artist of all artists and Impressionist of all impressionists, for everything He ever said and did impresses us and has transformed our prosaic, monochrome existence into a jubilee of worship, praise, colour and a joyful celebration in holy anticipation of the long-awaited day of His Second Coming. Maranatha!

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa

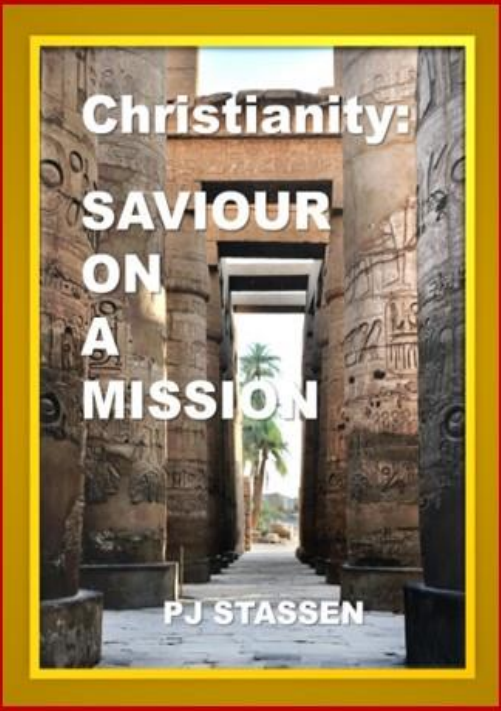
AUTHOR PROFILE

P. J. Stassen, born in 1947 in Randgate, South Africa, holds a B.A. degree in Industrial Psychology & Sociology (Industrial) from the University of South Africa. A former businessman who, after mandatory military conscription, spent the first 12 years of his life in 1966 in the field of retail (Textiles & General Dealer) in a family business begun by his father in 1964, thereafter worked at various other jobs eventually arriving in the fulfilling position of a corporate trainer with Kumba Resources (formerly Iscor Iron Ore Mine) in the Bushveldt region of South Africa during the years 1986 and 1997. At the time of his retirement in 2013 he was engaged in Occupational Health & Safety Training in the corporate environment on a contract basis for a Johannesburg company.

P.J. Stassen and his wife are both retired and live in Centurion, South Africa after having also served in their capacities as gospel musicians (pianist & organist respectively) in churches in places like Vanderbijlpark, Bloemfontein, Thabazimbi, Sinoville and Centurion.

P.J. Stassen writes in the fields of Evangelical Christianity and Biblical Creationism.

© Copyright 2021 PJ Stassen All Rights Reserved Centurion South Africa



Son of God, Son of David and Son of Man, He came to die for His own creation and for the sins of the world.

The Gospel of Jesus Christ; offered to all but forced on none.

Only one life that will soon be past; only what's done for this humble Carpenter-Rabbi from Nazareth will last.

MORE BOOKS BY THE SAME AUTHOR

- Christianity: The Invitation Still Stands
- Christianity: Fighting the Good Fight
- Christianity: Keeping the Faith
- Christianity: Confronting the Trojan Horse in the Church
- Meditations & Contemplations: Straight out of Joburg!
- Choosing the Right Side of History
- Christendom Opnieuw Bezocht